# THE NEW TESTAMENT OF OUR Lord and Saviour IESUS CHRIST.

Newly translated out of the originall greeke: and with the former translations diligently compared and revised by his Majesties speciall command.

EDINBVRGH, Printed by Iames Bryson, and are to be sold at his shop, a little above the Kirk style, at ye signe of the golden angel. An. Dom. 1642.

# THE ORDER OF THE BOOKS of the New Testament with their proper names, and number of Chapters.

| | |
|---|---|
| THE gospel written by Matthew hath chapters | 28 |
| By Mark | 16 |
| By Luke | 24 |
| By John | 21 |
| The Acts of the Apostles | 28 |

*The Epistles.*

| | |
|---|---|
| PAul to the Romanes | 16 |
| The first to the Corinthians | 16 |
| The second to the Corinthians | 13 |
| To the Galatians | 6 |
| To the Ephesians | 6 |
| To the Philippians | 4 |
| To the Colossians | 4 |
| The first to the Thessalonians | 5 |
| The second to the Thessalonians | 3 |
| The first to Timothie | 6 |
| The second to Timothie | 4 |
| To Titus | 3 |
| To Philemon | 1 |
| To the Hebrews | 13 |
| The epistle of James | 5 |
| The first of Peter | 5 |
| The second of Peter | 3 |
| The first of John | 5 |
| The second of John | 1 |
| The third of John | 1 |
| The epistle of Jude | 1 |
| The Revelation of John | 22 |

THE

# THE GOSPEL ACCORDING To S. MATTHEW.

## CHAP. I.

*1 Christs genealogie: 13 his conception, birth, & names.*

THE book of the generation of JESUS CHRIST, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

2 Abraham begat Isaac, and Isaac begat Jacob, and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren.

3 And Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar, and Phares begat Esrom, and Esrom begat Aram.

4 And Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat Naasson, and Naasson begat Salmon.

5 And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab, and Booz begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse.

6 And Jesse begat David the king. and David the king begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife* of Urias.

7 And Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and Abia begat Asa.

8 And Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat Joram and Joram begat Ozias.

9 And Ozias begat Joatham, and Joatham begat Achaz, and Achaz begat Ezekias.

10 And Ezekias begat Manasses, and Manasses begat Amon, and Amon begat Josias.

11 And Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren about the time they were carried away to Babylon.

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Zorobabel.

13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud, begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor.

14 And Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud.

15 And Eliud begat Eleazar and Eliazar, begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Jacob.

16 And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to David, are fourteen generations; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon, are fourteen generations: and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ, are fourteen generations.

18 ¶ Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph (before they came together) she was found with childe of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Joseph her husband being a just man, and not willing to make her a publique example, was minded to put her away privily.

20 But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph thou Son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: For that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost.

21 And she shall bring forth a Son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus; For he shall save his people from their sins.

22 (Now all this was done, that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,

23 Behold, a virgin shall be with childe, and shall bring forth a Son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted, is, God with us)

24 Then Joseph being raised from sleep did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife:

25 And knew her not till she had brought forth her first-born Son, and he called his name Jesus.

## CHAP. II.

1 *The wise men come to Christ*, 11 *and worship him.* 14 *Joseph fleeth into Egypt.*

NOw when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the dayes of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem,

2 Saying, Where is he that is born king of the Jews? For we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

3 When Herod the king had heard *these things*, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.

4 And when he had gathered all the chief priests

and

and Scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.

5 And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the prophet,

6 And thou Bethlehem in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governour that shall rule my people Israel.

7 Then Herod, when hee had privily called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared.

8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young childe, and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.

9 When they had heard the king, they departed, and lo the star which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young childe was.

10 When they saw the star, they rejoyced with exceeding great joy.

11 ¶ And when they were come into the house they saw the young childe with Mary his mother, and fell down & worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrhe.

12 And being warned of God in a dream, that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their countrey another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise and take the young childe, and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and bee thou there until I bring thee word: For Herod will seek the young childe to destroy him.

14 When he arose, he took the young Childe, and his mother by night & departed into Egypt:

15 And was there until the death of Herod: that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called my Son.

16 ¶ Then Herod when hee saw that hee was mocked of the wise men was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time

which he had diligently enquired of the wisemen.
17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremie the prophet, saying,
18 In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping *for* her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.
19 But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,
20 Saying, Arise, and take the young childe and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young childes life.
21 And he arose, and took the young childe and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.
22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Judea, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:
23 And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

## CHAP. III.

*1 Iohn preacheth his office, life, and baptisme: 7 He reprehendeth the Pharisees, 13 and baptiseth Christ in Iordan.*

IN those dayes came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea,
2 And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdome of heaven is at hand.
3 For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.
4 And the same John had his raiment of camels hair, and a lathern girdle about his loyns, and his meat was locusts and wild honey.
5 Then went out to him Jerusalem and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan.
6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.
7 ¶ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptisme, he said unto them O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance:
9 And think not to say within your selves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.
10 And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen down, and cast into the fire.
11 I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthie to bear: he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire.
12 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floore, and gather his wheat into the garner: but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.
13 ¶ Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.
14 But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?
15 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousnesse. Then he suffered him.
16 And Jesus when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him.
17 And lo, a voice from heaven saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 Christ is tempted, and overcometh: 17 Beginneth to preach. 18 Calleth his Disciples.*

THen was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wildernesse, to be tempted of the devil.
2 And when he had fasted fourty dayes and fourtie nights, he was afterward an hungred.
3 And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.
4 But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.
5 Then the devil taketh him up into the holy

city, and setteth him on a pinacle of the temple,

6 And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God cast thy self down: For it is written, Hee shall give his angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

7 Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

8 Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdomes of the world, and the glorie of them:

9 And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: For it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

11 Then the devil leaveth him and behold, angels came and ministred unto him.

12 ¶ Now when Jesus had heard that John was cast into prison, he departed into Galilee

13 And leaving Nazareth, hee came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the Sea-coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalit

14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

15 The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthali, by the way of the Sea beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles:

16 The people which sate in darknesse, saw great light: and to them which sate in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up.

17 ¶ From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say. Repent, for the kingdome of heaven is at hand.

18 ¶ And Jesus walking by the Sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the Sea: (For they were fishers)

19 ¶ And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

20 And they straightway left their nets, and followed him.

21 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and he called them.

22 And

22 And they immediatly left the ship and their father, and followed him.

23 ¶ And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing all manner of sicknesse, and all manner of disease among the people.

24 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with diverse diseases, and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsie, and he healed them.

25 And there followed him great multitudes of people, from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

## CHAP. V.

*3 Who are blessed. 13 The apostles are the salt and light of the world.*

AND seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountaine: and when hee was set, his disciples came unto him.

2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,

3 Blessed *are* the poore in spirit: for theirs is the kingdome of heaven.

4 Blessed *are* they that mourn: for they shall bee comforted.

5 Blessed *are* the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

6 Blessed *are* they which doe hunger and thirst after righteousnesse: for they shall be filled.

7 Blessed *are* the mercifull: for they shall obtaine mercy.

8 Blessed *are* the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

9 Blessed *are* the peace-makers: for they shall be called the children of God.

10 Blessed *are* they which are persecuted for righteousnesse sake: for theirs is the kingdome of heaven.

11 Blessed *are* yee when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely for my sake.

12 Rejoyce, and be exceeding glad: for great is

your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

13 ¶ Yee are the salt of the earth: but if the sale have lost his savour, wherewith shall it bee salted? it is thence-forth good for nothing, but to bee cast out, and to bee troden under foot of men.

14 Ye are the light of the world. A citie that is set on an hill, cannot be hid.

15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel: but on a candlestick, and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.

16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorifie your Father which is in heaven.

17 ¶ Think not that I am come to destroy the Law or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.

18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth passe, one iote or one title shall in no wise passe from the law, till all be fulfilled.

19 Whosoever therefore shall breake one of these least commandments, & shall teach men so, hee shall be called the least in the kingdome of heaven: but whosoever shall do, & teach *them*, the same shalbe called great in ỹ kingdome of heaven.

20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousnesse shall exceed the *righteousnesse* of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdome of heaven.

21 ¶ Ye have heard, that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill: and whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judgement.

22 But I say unto you, that whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgement: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Racha, shall be in danger of the councel: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.

23 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee;

24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first bee reconciled to thy brother, and then come, and offer thy gift.

25 Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him: lest at any time the adversary

adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.

26 Verily I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

27 ¶ Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, thou shalt not commit adultery.

28 But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adulterie with her already in his heart.

29 And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole bodie should be cast into hell.

31 It hath been said, Whosoever shal put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement.

32 But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: & whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery.

33 ¶ Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thy self, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths.

34 But I say unto you, Swear not at all, neither by heaven, for it is Gods throne:

35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of ỹ great King.

36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one haire white or black.

37 But let your communication be Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more then these, cometh of evil.

38 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

39 But I say unto you, that ye resist not evill: but whosoever shal smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also.

40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also.

41 And whosoever shall compell thee to go a mile, go with him twain.

42 Give

42 Give to him that asketh thee: and from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away.

43 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy.

44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you:

45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven, for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

46 For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the Publicanes the same?

47 And if ye salute your brethren only, what do you more *then others* do not even the Publicanes so?

48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

## CHAP. VI.

*1 Of almes, 5 prayer, 14 forgiving, 16 fasting, 19 our treasure. 24 God and mammon.*

TAke heed that ye do not your almes before men, to bee seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven.

2 Therefore, when thou doest thine almes, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrits do, in the synagogues, and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily, I say unto you, they have their reward.

3 But when thou doest almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doth:

4 That thine almes may bee in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, himself shall reward thee openly.

5 ¶ And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrits are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily, I say unto you, they have their reward.

6 But thou when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy doore, pray to thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

7 But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions,

as

as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

8 Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.

9 After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.

10 Thy kingdome come. Thy will be done in earth as *it is* in heaven.

11 Give us this day our dayly bread.

12 And forgive us our debts, as wee forgive our debters.

13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdome, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

14 For, if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you.

15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

16 ¶ Moreover, when ye fast, be not as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces ℣ they may appear unto men to fast. Verily, I say unto you, they have their reward.

17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face:

18 That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: & thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not up for your selves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where theeves break through and steal.

20 But lay up for your selves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, & where theeves do not break through nor steal.

21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

22 The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light.

23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shal be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness.

24 ¶ No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one and love the other, or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

25 There-

25 Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body what ye shall put on: Is not life more then meat & the body then raiment?

26 Behold the fowles of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking thought, can adde one cubit unto his stature?

28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin.

29 And yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory, was not arrayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore if God so clothe the grasse of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, *shall he* not much more *clothe* you, O ye of little faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or what shall we drink? or wherewithall shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.

33 But seek ye first the kingdome of God, and his righteousnesse, and all these things shall be added unto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of it self: sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

## CHAP. VII.

1 *Christ reproveth rash judgement, 6 forbiddeth to cast holy things to dogs. 13 The wide and straite gate.*

Judge not, that ye be not judged.

2 For with what judgement ye judge ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and behold, a beam is in thine own eye?

5 Thou

5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 ¶ Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rent you.

7 ¶ Ask, and it shall be given you, seek, and ye shall finde: knock, and it shal be opened unto you.

8 For every one that asketh receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone?

10 Or if he aske a fish, will he give him a serpent?

11 If ye then being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

12 Therefore all things whatsoever yee would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

13 ¶ Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat.

14 Because strait is the gate, & narrow is the way which leadeth unto life, & few there be ℣ finde it.

15 ¶ Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

16 Ye shall know them by their fruits: Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?

17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

19 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen down and cast into the fire.

20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shal know them.

21 ¶ Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdome of heaven but he ℣ doth the wil of my Father which is in heaven.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy Name? and in thy Name have cast out devils? and in thy Name done many wonderfull works?

23 And

23 And then will I profesſe unto them, I never knew you: depart from me ye ¶ work iniquity.

24 ¶ Therefore, whoſoever heareth theſe ſayings of mine, and doth them, I will likenhim unto a wiſe man which built his houſe upon a rock:

25 And the rain deſcended, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat upon that houſe; and it fell not, for it was founded upon a rock.

26 And every one that heareth theſe ſayings of mine, and doth them not, ſhall be likened unto a fooliſh man which built his houſe upon the ſand:

27 And the rain deſcended and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat upon that houſe; and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to paſſe when Jeſus had ended theſe ſayings, the people were aſtoniſhed at his doctrine.

29 For he taught them as one having authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

## CHAP. VIII.

*1 Chriſt cleanſeth the leper. 28 The devils driven out of two men, 31 go into the ſwine.*

WHen hee was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

2 And behold, there came a leper and worſhipped him, ſaying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canſt make me clean.

3 And Jeſus put forth his hand and touched him, ſaying, I will be thou clean. And immediatly his leproſie was cleanſed.

4 And Jeſus ſaith unto him, See thou tell no man, but go thy way, ſhew thy ſelf to the prieſt, and offer the gift that Moſes commanded, for a teſtimony unto them.

5 ¶ And when Jeſus was entred into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beſeeching him,

6 And ſaying, Lord, my ſervant lyeth at home ſick of the palſie, grievouſly tormented:

7 And Jeſus ſaith unto him, I will come and heal him.

8 The centurion anſwered and ſaid, Lord, I am not worthy that thou ſhouldeſt come under my roof: but ſpeak the word only, and my ſervant ſhall be healed:

9 For I am a man under authority, having ſoldiers

diers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doth it.

10 When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great Faith, no, not in Israel.

11 And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east, and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdome of heaven.

12 But the children of the kingdome shall be cast out into outer darkenesse: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast beleeved, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the self same houre.

14 ¶ And when Jesus was come into Peters house, he saw his wives mother laid, and sick of a fever.

15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose and ministred unto them.

16 ¶ When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and hee cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities and bare our sicknesses.

18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.

19 And a certaine Scribe came and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

20 And Jesus saith unto him, The Foxes have holes, and the birds of the aire have nests, but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

21 And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

22 But Jesus said unto him, Follow me, and let the dead bury their dead.

23 ¶ And when he was entred into a ship, his disciples followed him.

24 And behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep.

25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him,

him, saying, Lord save us: we perish.

26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose & rebuked the winds and the sea, and there was a great calm.

27 But the men marvelled, saying What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?

28 ¶ And when he was come to the other side, into the country of the Gergesens, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might passe by that way.

29 And behold, they cryed out, saying What have we to do with thee, Jesus thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

30 And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine, feeding.

31 So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

32 And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters.

33 And they that kept them fled, and went their wayes into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.

34 And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

## CHAP. IX.

*1 Christ curing the palsie. 9 calleth Matthew: 10 eateth with publicanes and sinners.*

AND he entred into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city.

2 And behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsie, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsie, Son, be of good cheer, thy sins be forgiven thee.

3 And behold, certain of the Scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?

5 For whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee? or to say, Arise and walk?

6 But

6 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (then saith he to the sick of the palsie) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house,

7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitude saw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

9 ¶ And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receit of custome: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

10 ¶ And it came to passe, as Jesus sate at meat in the house, behold many Publicanes and sinners came and sate down with him and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharisees saw *it*, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your master with Publicanes and sinners?

12 But when Jesus heard *that*, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.

13 But go ye and learn, what that meaneth, I will have mercie, and not sacrifice: For I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

14 ¶ Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the daves will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

16 No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment: For that which is put in to fill it up, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

18 ¶ While he spake these things unto them: behold, there came a certain ruler and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.

19 And

19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples.

20 ¶ (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of bloud twelve yeares, came behinde him, and touched the hem of his garment.

21 For she said within her selfe, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.

22 But Jesus turned him about, and when hee saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that houre)

23 And when Jesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels & the people making a noise,

24 He said unto them, Give place, for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.

25 But when the people were put forth he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.

26 And the fame hereof went abroad into all that land.

27 ¶ And when Jesus departed thence, two blinde men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou son of David, have mercie on us.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blinde men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Beleeve ye that I am able to do this? they said unto him, Yea, LORD.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith, be it unto you.

30 And their eyes were opened, & Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that countrey.

32 ¶ As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumbe man possessed with a devil.

33 And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, it was never so seen in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees said, He casteth out the devils through the Prince of the devils.

35 And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues & preaching the gospel of the Kingdome and healing every sicknesse, and every disease among the people.

36 ¶ But when he saw the multitudes he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted

fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd.

37 Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few.

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

## CHAP. X.

*1 The apostles are sent to do miracles, and to preach.*

AND when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave unto them power *against* unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease.

2 Now the names of the twelve apostles are these: The first Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother.

3 Philip, and Bartholomew, Thomas and Matthew the Publicane, James the son of Alpheus, and Lebbeus, whose surename was Thaddeus.

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritanes, enter ye not.

6 But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

7 And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdome of heaven is at hand.

8 Heal the sick, cleanse ȳ lepers, raise ȳ dead, cast out devils: Freely ye have received, freely give.

9 Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brasse in your purses:

10 Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves; (For the workman is worthie of his meat.)

11 And into whatsoever city or town yee shall enter, enquire who in it is worthie, and there abide till ye go thence.

12 And when ye come into an house, salute it.

13 And if the house be worthie, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthie, let your peace return to you.

14 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words: when yee depart out of that house, or citie, shake off the dust of your feet.

15 Verily

15 Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah, in the day of judgement, then for that citie.

16 ¶ Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmlesse as doves.

17 But beware of men. for they will deliver you up to the councels, and they will scourge you in their synagogues.

18 And ye shall be brought before governours and kings for my sake, for a testimonie against them and the Gentiles.

19 But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak, for it shall be given you in that same houre what ye shal speak.

20 For it is not ye that speak, but the spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.

21 And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death and the father the childe: and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death.

22 And ye shalbe hated of all men for my names sake: but he that endureth to the end, shalbe saved.

23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

24 The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord.

25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord: if they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

26 Fear them not therefore: For there is nothing covered that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known.

27 What I tell you in darkneſſe, *that* speak ye in light: And what ye hear, in the ear, that preach ye upon the house tops

28 And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul & body in hell.

29 Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father.

30 But the very hairs of your head are all numbred.

31 Fear

31 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparrows.

32 Whosoever therefore shall confesse me before men, him will I confesse also before my Father which is in heaven.

33 But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

34 Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

35 For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

36 And a mans foes *shall be* they of his own houshold.

37 He that loveth father or mother more then me, is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more then me, is not worthy of me.

38 And he that taketh not his crosse, and followeth after me, is not worthie of me.

39 He that findeth his life shall loose it: and he that looseth his life for my sake, shall finde it.

40 ¶ He that receiveth you, receiveth me, and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophets reward: and he that receiveth a righteous man, in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous mans reward.

42 And whosoever shall give to drinke unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise loose his reward.

## CHAP. XI.

1 *Iohn sendeth to Christ, 4 Christs answer.*

AND it came to passe, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach & to preach in their cities.

2 Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

3 And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or doe we look for another?

4 Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see:

5 The blinde receive their sight, and the lame walk

walke, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf heare, the dead are raised up, and the poore have the gospel preached unto them.

6 And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me.

7 ¶ And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John What went ye out into the wildernesse to see? A reed shaken with the winde?

8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing, are in kings houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more then a prophet.

10 For this is hee of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verily I say unto you, among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater then John the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdome of heaven, is greater then he.

12 And from the dayes of John the Baptist, until now, the kingdome of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For all the prophets, and the law prophesied until John.

14 And if ye will receive *it*, this is Elias which was for to come

15 He that hath eares to hear, let him hear.

16 ¶ But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets and calling unto their fellowes,

17 And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned unto you, and yee have not lamented.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil.

19 The Son of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold, a man gluttonous, and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners: but wisedome is justified of her children.

20 ¶ Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mightie works were done, because they repented not.

21 Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto thee Bethsaida. For if the mighty works which were done in you

you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

22 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgement, then for you.

23 And thou Capernaum which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: For if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained untill this day.

24 But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgement, then for thee.

25 ¶ At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

26 Even so Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

27 All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son but the Father, neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him.

28 ¶ Come unto me all ye that labour, and are heavie laden, and I will give you rest.

29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall finde rest unto your souls.

30 For my yoke is easie, & my burden is light.

## CHAP. XII.

1 *The disciples pluck the ears of corn on the Sabbath.* 31 *Blasphemy against the holy Ghost.*

AT that time Jesus went on the Sabbath-day through the corn, and his disciples were an hungred, and began to pluck the eares of corn, and to eat.

2 But when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawfull to do upon the Sabbath-day.

3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him,

4 How he entred into the house of God, and did eat the shew-bread, which was not lawfull for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests?

5 Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the Sabbath-dayes the priests in the Temple profane the Sabbath, and are blameleſſe?

6 But I ſay unto you, That in this place is one greater then the Temple.

7 But if ye had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy and not ſacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltleſſe.

8 For the Son of man is Lord even of the Sabbath-day.

9 And when he was departed thence, he went into their Synagogue.

10 ¶ And behold, there was a man which had his hand withered: and they asked him ſaying, Is it lawfull to heal on the Sabbath-dayes? that they might accuſe him.

11 And he ſaid unto them, What man ſhall there be among you, that ſhall have one ſheep, and if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath-day, will hee not lay hold on it, and lift it out?

12 How much then is a man better then a ſheep? wherefore it is lawfull to do well on the Sabbath-dayes.

13 Then ſaith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand: and he ſtretched it forth; and it was reſtored whole, like as the other.

14 ¶ Then the Phariſees went out, and held a counſel againſt him how they might deſtroy him.

15 But when Jeſus knew it, he with-drew himſelf from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all,

16 And charged them that they ſhould not make him known:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken by Eſaias the prophet, ſaying,

18 Behold, my ſervant whom I have choſen my beloved in whom my ſoul is well pleaſed: I will put my Spirit upon him, and he ſhall ſhew judgement to the Gentiles.

19 He ſhall not ſtrive, nor cry, neither ſhall any man hear his voice in the ſtreets.

20 A bruiſed reed ſhall he not break, and ſmoking flax ſhall he not quench, till he ſend forth judgement unto victory.

21 And in his Name ſhall the Gentiles truſt.

22 ¶ Then was brought unto him one poſſeſſed

with

with a devil, blinde and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the blinde and dumb both spake and saw.

23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is this the Son of David?

24 But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This *fellow* doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

25 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdome divided against it self is brought to desolation: and every city or house divided against it selfe, shall not stand.

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself, how shall then his kingdome stand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges.

28 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God then the kingdome of God is come unto you.

29 Or else how can one enter into a strong mans house, and spoile his goods, except he first binde the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

30 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

31 ¶ Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemie shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemie against the *holy* Ghost, shall not be forgiven unto men.

32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good: or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: For the tree is known by his fruit.

34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth good things: & an evil man out of ỹ evil treasure, bringeth forth evil things.

36 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shal give account thereof in the day of judgement.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and

by thy words thou shalt be saved.

38 ¶ Then certain of the Scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a signe from thee.

39 But he answered and said to them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be given to it, but the signe of the prophet Jonas.

40 For as Jonas was three dayes and three nights in the whales belly: So shall the Son of man be three dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth.

41 The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgement with this generation, and shall condemne it, because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and behold, a greater then Jonas is here.

42 The Queen of the South shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: For she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisedome of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

43 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

44 Then he saith, I will return into mine house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished.

45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked then himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse then the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

46 ¶ While he yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speake with him.

47 Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.

48 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold, my mother, and my brethren.

50 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

CHAP.

THE same day went Jesus out of the house, and sate by the Sea-side.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat, and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a Sower went forth to sow.

4 And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the wayes side, and the fowls came and devoured them up.

5 Some fell upon stonie places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepnesse of earth:

6 And when the Sun was up they were scorched, & because they had not root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns: and the thorns sprung up and choked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundreth fold, some sixtie fold, some thirtie fold.

9 Who hath eares to hear, let him hear.

10 And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables?

11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdome of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away, even that he hath.

13 Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not: and hearing, they hear not, neither doe they understand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophesie of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand: and seeing ye shall see and shall not perceive.

15 For this people's heart is waxed grosse, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed, lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should bee converted, and I should heal them.

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears, for they hear.

17 For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them, and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

18 ¶ Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdome, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart: This is he which received seed by the way side.

20 But he that received the seed into stonie places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anone with joy receiveth it.

21 Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: For when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by & by he is offended.

22 He also that received seed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word: and the care of this world, and the deceitfulnesse of riches choke the word, and he becometh unfruitfull.

23 But he that received seed into ỹ good ground, is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it, which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth some an hundreth fold, some sixtie, some thirty.

24 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdome of heaven is likned unto a man which sowed good seed in his field:

25 But while men slept, his enemie came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the servants of the houshold er came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? From whence then hath it tares?

28 He said unto them, An enemie hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

29 But he said, Nay, lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together until the harvest: and in ỹ time of harvest I will say to ỹ reapers, Gather ye together first ỹ tares & binde them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

31 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdome of heaven is like to a grain

of

of mustard seed, which a man took and sowed in his field.

32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree: So that the birds of the aire come and lodge in the branches thereof.

33 ¶ Another parable spake he unto them, The kingdome of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

34 All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables, and without a parable spake he not unto them:

35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables, I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed, is the Son of man:

38 The field is the world, the good seed are the children of the kingdome: but the tares are the children of the wicked one:

39 The enemie that sowed them, is the devil: the harvest is the end of the world: and the reapers are the angels.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.

41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdome all things that offend, and them which do iniquitie:

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

43 Then shall the righteous shine forth as the Sun, in the kingdome of their Father. Who hath eares to hear, let him hear.

44 ¶ Again, the kingdome of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field, the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Again, the kingdome of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls:

46 Who when he had found one pearl of great

price, he went & sold all that he had, & bought it.

47 ¶ Again, the kingdome of heaven is like unto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kinde:

48 Which, when it was full they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bade away.

49 So shall it be at the end of the world: The angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just.

50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

51 Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then said he unto them, Therefore every Scribe which is instructed unto the kingdome of heaven, is like unto a man that is an housholder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

53 ¶ And it came to passe, that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

54 And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their Synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished and said, Whence hath this man this wisedome, & these mighty works?

55 Is not this the carpenters Son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?

56 And his sisters, are they not all with us? Whence then hath this man all these things?

57 And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, and in his own house.

58 And he did not many mighty works there, because of their unbeliefe.

## CHAP. XIIII.

*1 Herods opinion of Christ. 10 John Baptist beheaded.*

AT that time Herod the Tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus,

2 And said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist, he is risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

3 ¶ For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife.

4 For John said unto him, It is not lawfull for thee to have her.

5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a Prophet.

6 But when Herods birth-day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod.

7 Whereupon he promised with an oath, to give her whatsoever she would aske.

8 And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptists head in a charger.

9 And the king was sory: nevertheless for the oaths sake, and them which sate with him at meat, he commanded it to be given her.

10 And he sent & beheaded John in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought it to her mother.

12 And his disciples came, and took up the bodie, and buried it, and went and told Jesus.

13 ¶ When Jesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart: and when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foot out of the cities.

14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them and he healed their sicke.

15 ¶ And when it was evening his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.

16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart give ye them to eate.

17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes.

18 He said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And hee commanded the multitude to sit down on the grasse, and took the five loves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained, twelve baskets ful.

21 And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, & to go before him unto ỹ other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

23 And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone.

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the winde was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Jesus went unto them walking on the sea.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit, and they cryed out for fear.

27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer, it is I, be not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus.

30 But when he saw the winde boistrous, he was afraid: and begining to sinke, he cryed, saying, Lord, save me.

31 And immediatly Jesus stretched forth his hand and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little Faith wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the ship the winde ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

34 ¶ And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret.

35 And when the men of ỹ place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that countrey round about & brought unto him all that were diseased,

36 And besought him, that they might only touch the hem of his garment: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

## CHAP. X.

2 *Gods commandements and mens traditions.*
11 *What discipleth, and whom not.*

THen came to Jesus Scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying,

Why

2 Why do thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the elders? For they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do you also transgresse the commandment of God by your tradition?

4 For God commanded, saying, Honour thy Father and Mother: and he that curseth Father or Mother, let him die the death.

5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his Father, or his mother, It is a gift by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me.

6 And honour not his Father or his mother, *he shall be free.* Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.

7 Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesie of you, saying,

8 This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me.

9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

10 ¶ And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear and understand.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth the man: but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying?

13 But he answered and said, Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

14 Let them alone: they be blinde leaders of the blinde. And if the blinde lead the blinde, both shall fall into the ditch.

15 Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable.

16 And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding?

17 Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entreth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and they defile the man.

19 For

31 And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, & to go before him unto ỹ other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

23 And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone.

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: For the winde was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Jesus went unto them walking on the sea.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit, and they cryed out for fear.

27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer, it is I, be not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus.

30 But when he saw the winde boistrous, he was afraid: and begining to sinke, he cryed, saying, Lord, save me.

31 And immediatly Jesus stretched forth his hand and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little Faith wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the ship, the winde ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

34 ¶ And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret.

35 And when the men of ỹ place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round about & brought unto him all that were diseased,

36 And besought him, that they might only touch the hem of his garment: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

## CHAP. X.

*2 Gods commandements and mens traditions.*
*11 What defileth, and whatnot.*

THen came to Jesus Scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying,

Why

2 Why do thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the elders? For they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do you also transgresse the commandment of God by your tradition?

4 For God commanded, saying, Honour thy Father and Mother: and he that curseth Father or Mother, let him die the death.

5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his Father, or his mother, It is a gift by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me.

6 And honour not his Father or his mother, *he shall be free.* Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.

7 Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesie of you, saying,

8 This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me.

9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

10 ¶ And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear and understand.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth the man: but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying?

13 But he answered and said, Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

14 Let them alone: they be blinde leaders of the blinde. And if the blinde lead the blinde, both shall fall into the ditch.

15 Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable.

16 And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding?

17 Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entreth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and they defile the man.

19 For

19 For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witnesse, blasphemies.

20 These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands, defileth not a man.

21 ¶ Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon.

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cryed unto him, saying, Have mercie on me, O Lord, thou Son of David, my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.

23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she cryeth after us.

24 But he answered and said, I am not sent, but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

25 Then came she and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.

26 But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to dogs.

27 And she said, Truth Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters table.

28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy Faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very houre.

29 And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the Sea of Galilee and went up into a mountaine, and sat down there.

30 And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blinde, dumbe, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus feet, and he healed them:

31 Insomuch that the multitude wondred when they saw the dumbe to speake, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walke, and the blinde to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

32 ¶ Then Jesus called his Disciples unto him, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with mee now three dayes, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way.

33 And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so much bread in the wildernesse, as to fill so great a multitude?

34 And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have

have ye? & they said, Seven, and a few litle fishes.

35 And hee commanded the multitude to sit downe on the ground.

36 And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven baskets full.

38 And they that did eat, were foure thousand men, beside women and children.

39 And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

## CHAP. XVI.

*4 The signe of Ionas. 6 The leaven of the Pharisees and Sadduces. 21 Christ foresheweth his death.*

THe Pharisees also with the Sadduces, came, and tempting, desired him that hee would shew them a signe from heaven.

2 He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, *It will be* fair weather: For the skie is red.

3 And in the morning, *It will be* foul weather to day: For the sky is red and lowring, O ye hypocrites, ye can discerne the face of the sky, but can ye not *discerne* the signes of the time?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be given unto it, but the signe of the prophet Ionas. And he left them and departed.

5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 ¶ Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadduces.

7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is* because we have taken no bread.

8 *Which* when Jesus perceived, hee said unto them, O ye of little Faith, why reason ye among your selves, because ye have brought no bread?

9 Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

10 Neither the seven loaves of the foure thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

11 How is it that ye do not understand, that I spake

spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees?

12 Then understood they how that he bad *them* not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.

13 ¶ When Jesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say, that I, the Son of man am?

14 And they said, Some *say that thou art* John the Baptist, some Elias, and others Jeremias, or one of the prophets.

15 He saith unto them, But whom say ye ¶ I am?

16 And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art Christ the Son of the living God.

17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou Simon Bar-Jona: For flesh and bloud hath not revealed *it* unto thee, but my Father which *is* in heaven.

18 And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church: and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

19 And I will give unto thee the keyes of the kingdome of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt binde on earth, shalt be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shalt be loosed in heaven.

20 Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

21 ¶ From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders, and chief priests, and Scribes, and be killed and be raised again the third day.

22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.

23 But he turned and said unto Peter, Get thee behinde me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things *that be* of God, but those that be of men.

24 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him denie himself, and take up his crosse, and follow me.

25 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall finde it.

26 For

26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

27 For the Son of man shall come in the glorie of his Father, with his angels: and then he shall reward every man according to his works.

28 Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdome.

## CHAP. XVII.

1 *The transfiguration of Christ.* 14 *He healeth the lunatick,* 22 *foretelleth his own passion,* 24 *and payeth tribute.*

AND after six dayes, Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart,

2 And was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the Sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold, a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased, hear ye him.

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their faces, and were sore afraid.

7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had lift up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead.

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the Scribes, that Elias must first come?

11 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things.

12 But I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed: likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13 Then

13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

14 ¶ And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying,

15 Lord have mercy on my son, for he is lunatick, and sore vexed: For oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked the devil, and he departed out of him: and the childe was cured from that very houre.

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Jesus said unto them Because of your unbelief: For verily I say unto you, If ye have Faith as a grain of of mustard-seed, ye shal say unto this mountaine, Remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remove, and nothing shall be unpossible unto you.

21 Howbeit this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

22 ¶ And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:

23 And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised again: & they were exceeding sory.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute-money, came to Peter, and said, Doth not your Master pay tribute?

25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? Of whom do the kings of the earth take custome or tribute? Of their owne children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free.

27 Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the Sea, and cast an hook and take up the fish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me & thee.

*1 Christ teacheth to be humble. 7 Touching offences, 21 and forgiving one another.*

AT the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdome of heaven?

2 And Jesus called a little childe unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

3 And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdome of heaven.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himselfe as this little childe, the same is greatest in the kingdome of heaven.

5 And whoso shall receive one such little childe in my Name, receiveth me.

6 But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the Sea.

7 ¶ Woe unto the world because of offences: For it must needs be that offences come: but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh.

8 Wherefore if thine hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast *them* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather then having two hands or two feet, to bee cast into everlasting fire.

9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather then having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones: For I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do alwayes behold the face of my Father which *is* in heaven.

11 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

12 How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine & goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray?

13 And if so be that he finde it, verily I say unto you, he rejoyceth more of that *sheep*, then of the ninty and nine which went not astray.

14 Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

15 ¶ More-

15 ¶ Moreover, if thy brother shall trespasse against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

16 But if he will not hear *thee*, *then* take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.

17 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man, and a publicane.

18 Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall binde on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

19 Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times?

22 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, until seventy times seven.

23 ¶ Therefore is the kingdome of heaven likened unto a certain king which would take account of his servants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him which ought him ten thousand talents.

25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which ought him an hundred pence: & he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

29 And his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and

and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were verie sorie, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldst not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow servant, even as I had pity on thee.

34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentours till he should pay all that was due unto him.

35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

## CHAP. XIX.

*Christ healeth the sick: 3 and answereth the Pharisees concerning divorcement.*

AND it came to passe, that when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea, beyond Jordan.

2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.

3 ¶ The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

4 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made *them* at the beginning, made them male and female?

5 And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh.

6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joyned together, let not man put asunder.

7 They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?

8 He saith unto them, Moses, because of the hardnesse of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

9 And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away

away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adulterie.

10 ¶ His disciples say unto him, If ỹ case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save *they* to whom it is given.

12 For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mothers womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdome of heavens sake. He that is able to receive *it*, let him receive *it*.

13 ¶ Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put *his* hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not to come unto me; For of such is the kingdome of heaven.

15 And he laid *his* hands on them, and departed thence.

16 ¶ And behold, one came and said unto him, Good master, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternall life?

17 And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? *there is* none good but one, *that is* God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep ỹ commandments.

18 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murther, Thou shalt not commit adulterie, Thou shalt not steal, thou shalt not bear false witnesse,

19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

20 The yong man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: What lack I yet?

21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go *and* sell that thou hast, and give to the poore, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come *and* follow me.

22 But when the yong man heard that saying, he went away sorrowfull: For he had great possessions.

23 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heaven.

24 And

24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

26 But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is unpossible, but with God all things are possible.

27 ¶ Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee, What shall we have therefore?

28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the Throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve Thrones, judging the twelve Tribes of Israel.

29 And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my names sake shall receive an hundred fold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

30 But many *that are* first, shall be last, and the last *shall be* first.

## CHAP. XX.

1 *Of the labourers in the vine-yard.* 20 *Christ teacheth his disciples to be humble.*

FOr the kingdome of heaven is like unto a man that is an housholder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a peny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the third houre, and saw others standing idle in the market-place,

4 And said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.

5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth houre, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleventh houre, he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, & whatsoever is right, *that* shall ye receive.

8 So when even was come, the Lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Cal the labourers and give them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first.

9 And

away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adulterie.

10 ¶ His disciples say unto him, If ỹ case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save *they* to whom it is given.

12 For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mothers womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdome of heavens sake. He that is able to receive *it*, let him receive *it*.

13 ¶ Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put *his* hands on them and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not to come unto me; For of such is the kingdome of heaven.

15 And he laid *his* hands on them, and departed thence.

16 ¶ And behold, one came and said unto him, Good master, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternall life?

17 And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? *there is* none good but one, *that is* God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep ỹ commandements.

18 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murther, Thou shalt not commit adulterie, Thou shalt not steal, thou shalt not bear false witnesse,

19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

20 The yong man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: What lack I yet?

21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go *and* sell that thou hast, and give to the poore, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come *and* follow me.

22 But when the yong man heard that saying, he went away sorrowfull: For he had great possessions.

23 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heaven.

24 And

24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

26 But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is unpossible, but with God all things are possible.

27 ¶ Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee, What shall we have therefore?

28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve Tribes of Israel.

29 And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my names sake shall receive an hundred fold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

30 But many *that are* first, shall be last, and the last *shall be* first.

## CHAP. XX.

*1 Of the labourers in the vine-yard. 20 Christ teacheth his disciples to be humble.*

FOr the kingdome of heaven is like unto a man that is an housholder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a peny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the third houre, and saw others standing idle in the market-place,

4 And said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.

5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth houre, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleventh houre, he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, & whatsoever is right, *that* shall ye receive.

8 So when even was come, the Lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Cal the labourers and give them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first.

9 And

9 And when they came that *were hired* about the eleventh houre, they received every man a penie.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more: and they likewise received every man a penie.

11 And when they had received *it*, they murmured against the good man of the house,

12 Saying, These last have wrought but one houre, and thou hast made them equall unto us which have born the burden and heat of the day.

13 But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a peny?

14 Take that thine *is*, and go thy way, I will give unto this last, even as unto thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for me to do what I will with mine own? is thine eye evil because I am good?

16 So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

17 ¶ And Jesus going up to Jerusalem, took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them,

18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chiefe priests, and unto the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death.

19 And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock and to scourge, and to crucifie *him*: and the third day he shall rise again.

20 ¶ Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children, with her sons, worshipping *him*, and desiring a certaine thing of him.

21 And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left in thy kingdome.

22 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able.

23 And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but *it shall be*

given

*given to them* for whom it is prepared of my Fa-
ther.

24 And when the ten heard *it*, they were moved
with indignation against the two brethren.

25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said,
Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise
dominion over them, and they that are great, ex-
ercise authoritie upon them.

26 But it shall not be so among you: but who-
soever will be great among you, let him be your
minister.

27 And whosoever will be chief among you, let
him be your servant.

28 Even as the Son of man came not to be mi-
nistred unto, but to minister, and to give his life
a ransome for many.

29 And as they departed from Jericho, a great
multitude followed him.

30 ¶ And behold, two blinde men sitting by
the way side, when they heard that Jesus passed
by, cryed out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord,
thou Son of David.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because
they should hold their peace: but they cryed the
more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou
Son of David.

32 And Jesus stood still, and called them, and
said, What will ye that I shall do unto you?

33 They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes
may be opened.

34 So Jesus had compassion on them, and touche
their eyes: and immediatly their eyes received
sight, and they followed him.

## CHAP. XXI.

*Christ rideth into Ierusalem on an asse, 12 He
casteth the buyers and sellers out of the temple,*

AND when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem,
and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount
of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,

2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over
against you, and straightway ye shall finde an asse
tied and a colt with her: loose *them*, and bring
*them* unto me.

3 And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall
say, The Lord hath need of them; and straight way
he will send them.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee meek, and sitting upon an asse, and a colt the foal of an asse.

6 And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them,

7 And brought the asse, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon.

8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way, others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed *them* in the way.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David: blessed is he that cometh in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

10 And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this?

11 And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 ¶ And Jesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the Temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves.

13 And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer, but ye have made it a den of theeves.

14 And the blinde and the lame came to him in the Temple, and he healed them.

15 And when the chief Priests and Scribes saw the wonderfull things that he did, and the children crying in the Temple, & saying Hosanna to the Son of David; they were sore displeased,

16 And said unto him, Heareſt thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea, have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?

17 ¶ And he left them, and went out of the citie into Bethany, and he lodged there.

18 Now in the morning as he returned into the city, he hungered.

19 And when he saw a fig-tree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And presently the fig tree withered away.

20 And

20 And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig-tree withered away?

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have Faith and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which is done to the figtree, but also if ye shal say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and bee thou cast into the Sea; it shall be done.

22 And all things whatsoever yee shall aske in prayer, beleeving, ye shall receive.

23 ¶ And when he was come into the Temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authoritie?

24 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will aske you one thing, which if you tell me, I in likewise will tell you by what authoritie I doe these things.

25 The baptisme of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? and they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then beleeve him?

26 But if wee shall say, Of men; wee fear the people, for all hold John as a prophet.

27 And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie I do these things.

28 ¶ But what thinke you? A certain man had two sons, and he came to the first, and said, Sonne get worke to day in my vineyard.

29 He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented and went.

30 And he came to the second, and said likewise. And hee answered and said, I go Sir, and went not.

31 Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the Publicanes and the harlots go into the Kingdome of God before you.

32 For John came unto you in the way of righteousnesse, and ye beleeved him not: but the Publicanes and the harlots beleeved him. And yee when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might beleeve him.

33 ¶ Hear another parable. There was a certaine householder which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-presse in it, and built a Tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a farre countrey.

34 And when the time of the fruit drew neere, he sent his servants to the husbandmen that they might receive the fruits of it.

35 And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Again, he sent other servants moe than the first: and they did unto them likewise.

37 But last of all, he sent unto them his Son, saying, They will reverence my Son.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the Son, they said among themselves, This is the heir, come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance.

39 And they caught *him*, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew *him*.

40 When the Lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?

41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out *his* vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the Scriptures, The stone which ¶ builders refused, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lords doing, & it is marvellous in our eyes?

43 Therefore say I unto you, The kingdome of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

44 And whosoever shall fall on this stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

45 And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

## CHAP. XXII.

*The marriage of the kings son. 9 The calling of the Gentiles. 11 The wedding garment.*

AND Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said,

2 The kingdome of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son.

3 And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.

4 Again he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen & my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, & went their ways, one to his farm, and another to his merchandise.

6 And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them.

7 But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt up their citie.

8 Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

9 Go ye therefore into the high wayes, and as many as ye shall finde, bide to the marriage.

10 So those servants went out into the high wayes, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

11 ¶ And when the king came in to see the guests, hee saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:

12 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding garment? And he was speechlesse.

13 Then said the king to the servants, Binde him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darknesse: There shall bee weeping and gnashing of teeth.

14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

15 ¶ Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might intangle him in his talke.

16 And they sent out unto him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man: For thou regardest not the person of men.

17 Tell us therefore What thinkest thou? Is it lawfull to give tribute unto Cesar, or not?

18 But Jesus perceived their wickednesse, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shew mee the tribute money. And they brought unto him a peny.

20 And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription?

21 They say unto him, Cesars. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Cesar, the things which are Cesars: and unto God, the things that are Gods.

22 When they had heard these words, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

23 ¶ The same day came to him the Sadducees which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him,

24 Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

25 Now there were with us seven brethren, and the first when he had married a wife, deceased, and having no issue, left his wife unto his brother.

26 Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh.

27 And last of all the woman died also.

28 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seven? For they all had her.

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels of God in heaven.

31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying,

32 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

33 And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

34 ¶ But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

35 Then one of them which was a lawyer asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the great commandment in the law?

37 Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord

Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy minde.

38 This is the first and great commandment.

39 And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

41 ¶ While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,

42 Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose Son is he? They say unto him, *The son* of David.

43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,

44 The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy foot-stool?

45 If David then call him Lord, How is he his son?

46 And no man was able to answer him a word; neither durst any man (from that day forth) ask him any moe questions.

## CHAP. XXIII.

*The Scribes and Pharisees good doctrine, but evil example of life.* 34 *The destruction of Jerusalem.*

THen spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

2 Saying, The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses seat.

3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, *that* observe and do; but do not yee after their works: For they say, and do not.

4 For they binde heavie burdens, and grievous to be born, and lay *them* on mens shoulders, but they *themselves* will not move them with *one* of their fingers.

5 But all their works they doe, for to bee seen of men: They make broad their phylacteries, and inlarge the borders of their garments,

6 And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the Synagogues,

7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

8 But be not ye called Rabbi: For one is your Master, *even* Christ, and all ye are brethren.

9 And call no man your father upon the earth:

For one is your Father which *is in* heaven.

10 Neither be yee called masters: For one is your Master, *even* Christ.

11 But he that is greatest among you, shall be your servant.

12 And whosoever shall exalt himself, shall be abased, and he that shall humble himself, shall be exalted.

13 ¶ But wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; For ye shut up the kingdome of heaven against men: For ye neither go in your selves, neither suffer ye them that are entring, to go in.

14 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; For ye devoure widows houses, and for a pretence make long prayers; therefore yee shall receive the greater damnation.

15 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; For ye compasse sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the childe of hell then your selves.

16 Wo unto you ye blinde guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the Temple, it is nothing: but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the Temple, he *is* a debter.

17 Yee fooles and blinde: For whether is greater the gold, or the Temple that sanctifieth the gold?

18 And whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty.

19 Yee fools, and blinde: For whether *is* greater the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?

20 Whoso therefore shall sweare by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 And whoso shall swear by the Temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 And hee that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the Throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

23 Wo unto you Scribes & Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgement, mercie, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

24 Ye blinde guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

25 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypo-

crites

rites, for ye make cleane the out-side of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excesse.

26 Thou blinde Pharisee, cleanse first that *which is* within the cup and platter, that the out-side of them may be clean also.

27 Wo unto you, Scribes & pharisees, hypocrites; for ye are like unto whited Sepulchres, which indeed appear beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all uncleanuesse.

28 Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie.

29 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the Sepulchres of the righteous.

30 And say, If we had been in the dayes of our fathers, we would not have beene partakers with them in the bloud of the prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto your selues, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.

32 Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.

33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

34 ¶ Wherefore behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and Scribes, and *some* of them ye shall kill and crucifie, and *some* of them shall ye scourge in your Synagogues, and persecute *them*, from citie to citie:

35 That upon you may come all the righteous bloud shed upon the earth, from the bloud of righteous Abel, unto the bloud of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the Temple and the altar.

36 Verily I say unto you, all these things shall come upon this generation.

37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together even as a hen gathereth her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not?

38 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.

39 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me hencefoorth, till ye shall say, Blessed *is he* that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

## CHAP. XXIIII.

1 *The destruction of the temple.* 29 *Of Christs coming to iudgement.*

AND Iesus went out, and departed from the Temple: and his disciples came to *him* for to shew him the buildings of the Temple.

2 And Iesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be throwen downe.

3 ¶ And as he sate upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the signe of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Iesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

5 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceive many.

6 And ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars: See that ye be not troubled: For all *these things* must come to passe, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome: & there shall be famines, and pestilences, & earthquakes in divers places.

8 All these *are* the beginning of sorrows.

9 Then shall they deliver you up to bee afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my Names sake.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

12 And because iniquitie shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

13 But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

14 And this gospel of the kingdome shall be preached in all the world, for a witnesse unto all nations, and then shall the end come.

15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth let him understand)

16 Then let them which bee in Iudea, flee into the mountains.

17 Let

17 Let him which is on the house top, not come down to take any thing out of his house.

18 Neither let him which is in the field, return backe to take his clothes.

19 And wo unto them that are with childe, and to them that give sucke in those dayes.

20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter neither on the Sabbath-day.

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

22 And except those dayes should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elects sake those dayes shall be shortened.

23 Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there: beleeve it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signes and wonders insomuch that (if it were possible) they shall deceive the very elect.

25 Behold, I have told you before.

26 Wherefore, if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert, go not forth: behold, or in the secret chambers: beleeve it not.

27 For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west: So shall also the comming of the Son of man be.

28 For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

29 ¶ Immediatly after the tribulation of those dayes, shall the Sun bee darkened, and the Moone shall not give her light, and the Starr shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.

30 And then shall appear the signe of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the Tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven, with power and great glorie.

31 And hee shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the foure windes, from one end of heaven to the other.

32 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree: when his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that Summer is nigh;

33 So likewise yee, when yee shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doores.

34 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not passe, till all these things be fulfilled.

35 Heaven and earth shall passe away, but my words shall not passe away.

36 ¶ But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

37 But as the dayes of Noe *were*, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

38 For as in the dayes that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying, and giving in marriage, untill the day that Noe entred into the arke:

39 And knew not untill the flood came, and took them all away; So shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

40 Then shall two be in the field, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

41 Two women shall be grinding at the mill, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

42 ¶ Watch therefore, for yee know not what houre your Lord doth come.

43 But know this, that if the good man of the house had known in what watch the thiefe would come, hee would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to bebroken up.

44 Therefore be yee also ready: For in such an houre as you thinke not, the Son of man cometh.

45 Who then is a faithfull and wise servant, whom his Lord hath made ruler over his houshold, to give them meat in due season?

46 Blessed *is* that servant, whom his Lord when he cometh, shall finde so doing.

47 Verily I say unto you, That hee shall make him ruler over all his goods.

48 But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his coming.

49 And shall begin to smite *his* fellow-servants, and to eat and drinke with the drunken:

50 The Lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not aware of:

51 And shall cut him asunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites: There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

CHAP.

1 *The parable of the ten virgins.* 14 *and of the talents.* 31 *The last iudgement described.*

THen shall the kingdome of heaven be likned unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroome.

2 And five of them were wise, and five were foolish.

3 They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oyl with them:

4 But the wise took oyl in their vessels with their lamps.

5 While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbred and slept.

6 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroome cometh, go ye out to meet him.

7 Then all those virgins rose, and trimmed their lamps.

8 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oyl, for our lamps are gone out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*, lest there be not enough for us and you, but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for your selves.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegroome came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the doore was shut.

11 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

12 And he answered and said, verily I say unto you, I know you not.

13 Watch therfore, for ye know neither the day nor the houre, wherein the Son of man cometh.

14 ¶ For *the kingdome of heaven is* as a man travelling into a far countrey who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods:

15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, & to another one, to every man according to his severalability, & straightway took his journey

16 Then he that had received the five talents, went and traded with the same, and made *them* other five talents.

17 And likewise he that *had received* two, hee also gained other two.

18 But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lords money.

19 After a long time, the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

20 And so he that had receiued five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliueredst vnto me five talents, behold, I haue gained besides them five talents moe.

21 His lord said vnto him, Well done, thou good and faithfull seruaut thou hast been faithful ouer a few things, I will make thee ruler ouer many things: enter thou into the ioy of thy lord.

22 He also that had receiued two talents, came and said, Lord thou deliueredst vnto me two talents: behold, I haue gained two other talents besides them.

23 His lord, said vnto him, Well done, good and faithfull seruant, thou hast been faithful ouer a few things, I will make thee ruler ouer many things: enter thou into the ioy of thy Lord.

24 Then he which had receiued the one talent, came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo there thou hast that is thine.

26 His lord answered and said vnto him, Thou wicked and slothfull seruant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I haue not strawed.

27 Thou oughtest therefore to haue put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should haue receiued mine own with usury.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto him which hath ten talents.

29 For vnto euery one y hath shall be given, and hee shall haue abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away, euen that which he hath.

30 And cast yee the vnprofitable seruant into outer darkneſſe, there shal be weeping and gnashing of teeth:

31 ¶ When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit vpon the Throne of his glory.

32 And before him shall be gathered all nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd diuideth his sheep from the goats.

33 And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34 Then shall the king say vnto them on his right

right hand, Come yee blessed of my Father, inherite the kingdome prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35 For I was an hungred, and yee gave mee meat: I was thirstie, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye tooke me in:

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison and ye came unto me.

37 Then shall the righteous answer him saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed *thee?* or thirstie, and gave *thee* drink?

38 When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee?*

39 Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?

40 And the king shall answer, and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, in as much as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, yee have done *it* unto me.

41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.

42 For I was an hungred, and yee gave mee no meat: I was thirstie, and ye gave me no drink:

43 I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or a thirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?

45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, in as much as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me.

46 And these shall goe away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternall.

## CHAP. XXVI.

1 *The rulers conspire against Christ* 14 *Judas selleth him.* 17 *Christ eateth the passeover.*

AND it came to passe, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

2 Ye know that after two dayes is *the feast of* the passeover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

3 Then assembled together the chief priests, and the Scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace

palace of ỹ high priest, who was called Caiaphas,
4 And consulted that they might take Jesus by
subtilty, and kill *him*.
5 But they said, Not on the feast *day*, lest there
be an uproare among the people.
6 ¶ Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the
house of Simon the leper,
7 There came unto him a woman having an
alabaster box of very precious ointment, and
poured *it* on his head, as he sate at *meat*.
8 But when his disciples saw *it*, they had indig-
nation, saying, To what purpose *is* this waste?
9 For this ointment might have been sold for
much, and given to the poore.
10 When Jesus understood *it*, he said unto them,
Why trouble yee the woman? for shee hath
wrought a good worke upon me.
11 For ye have the poore alwayes with you,
but me ye have not alwayes.
12 For in that she hath poured this ointment
on my body, she did *it* for my buriall.
13 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this
gospel shal be preached in the whole world, *there*
shall also this, that this woman hath done, be
told for a memorial of her.
14 ¶ Then one of the twelve, called Judas Is-
cariot, went unto the chief priests,
15 And said unto them, What will ye give me,
and I will deliver him unto you? and they cove-
nanted with him for thirtie pieces of silver.
16 And from that time, he sought opportuni-
tie to betray him.
17 ¶ Now the first *day* of the *feast of* unleave-
ned bread, the disciples came to Jesus, saying
unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for
thee to eat the passeover?
18 And he said, Go into the city to such a man,
and say unto him, The Master saith, My time is
at hand, I will keep the passeover at thy house
with my disciples.
19 And the disciples did as Jesus had appoin-
ted them, and they made ready the passeover.
20 Now when the even was come, he sate down
with the twelve.
21 And as they did eat, he said, Verily I say un-
to you, That one of you shall betray me.

22 And

22 And they were exceeding sorrowfull, and be-
gan every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it I?
23 And he answered and said, He that dippeth
his hand with me in the dish, the same shall be-
tray me.
24 The Son of man goeth as it is written of
him: but wo unto that man by whom the Son of
man is betrayed: it had been good for that man,
if he had not been born.
25 Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered
and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou
hast said.
26 ¶ And as they were eating, Jesus took bread,
and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the
disciples, and said, Take, eat, this my body.
27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and
gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it:
28 For this is my blood of the new Testament
which is shed for many for the remission of sins.
29 But I say unto you, I will not drink hence-
forth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when
I drink it new with you in my Fathers kingdome.
30 And when they had sung an hymne, they
went out into the mount of Olives.
31 Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be
offended because of me this night: For it is writ-
ten, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of
the flock shall be scattered abroad.
32 But after I am risen again, I will go before
you into Galilee.
33 Peter answered and said unto him, Though
all men should be offended because of thee, yet
will I never be offended.
34 Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee,
that this night before the cock crow, thou shalt
deny me thrice.
35 Peter said unto him, Though I should die
with thee, yet will I not deny thee: likewise also
said all the disciples.
36 ¶ Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place
called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples,
Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.
37 And he took with him, Peter, and the two
sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowfull, and
very heavy.
38 Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceed-
ing

ng ſorrowfull, even unto death: Tary yee here, and watch with me.

39 And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, ſaying, O my Father, if it bee poſſible, let this cup paſſe from me: Neuerthe-leſſe, not as I will, but as thou *wilt*.

40 And he cometh unto the diſciples, and find-eth them aſleep, and ſaith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one houre?

41 Watch and pray, that yee enter not into temptation: The ſpirit indeed *is* willing, but the fleſh *is* weak.

42 He went away again the ſecond time, and prayed, ſaying, O my Father, if this cup may not paſſe away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.

43 And he came and found them aſleep again: For their eyes were heavie.

44 And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, ſaying the ſame words.

45 Then cometh he to his diſciples, and ſaith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your reſt, be-hold, the houre is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of ſinners.

46 Riſe, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

47 ¶ And while he yet ſpake, lo, Judas one of the twelve came, and with him a great multitude with ſwords and ſtaves from the chief prieſts and el-ders of the people.

48 Now he that betrayed him, gave them a ſigne, ſaying, Whomſoever I ſhall kiſſe, that ſame is he, hold him faſt.

49 And forthwith he came to Jeſus, and ſaid, Hail maſter, and kiſſed him.

50 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they and laid hands on Jeſus, and took him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Jeſus, ſtretched out his hand, and drew his ſword, and ſtroke a ſervant of the high prieſts, and ſmote off his ear.

52 Then ſaid Jeſus unto him, Put up againe thy ſword into his place: For all they that take the ſword, ſhall periſh with the ſword.

53 Thinkeſt thou that I cannot now pray to my Father,

Father, and he shall presently give me more then twelve legions of angels.

54 But how then shall the Scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

55 In that same houre said Jesus to the multitudes, Are yee come out as against a theef with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the Temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

56 But all this was done, that the Scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsooke him, and fled.

57 ¶ And they that had laid hold on Jesus led him away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the Scribes and the elders were assembled.

58 But Peter followed him a far off, unto the high priests palace, and went in, and sat with the servants to see the end.

59 Now the chief priests and elders, and all the councel, sought false witnesse against Jesus to put him to death.

60 But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses,

61 And said, This *fellow* said, I am able to destroy the Temple of God, and to build it in three dayes.

62 And the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? What *is it*, *which* these witnesse against thee?

63 But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us, whether thou be the Christ the Son of God.

64 Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

65 Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy, what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy.

66 What think yee? They answered and said, He is guiltie of death.

67 Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted him, and others smote him with the palms of their hands,

68 Saying,

68 Saying, Prophesie unto us, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?

69 ¶ Now Peter sate without in the palace: and a damsel came unto him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee.

70 But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.

71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another *maid* saw him, and said unto them *that were* there, This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth.

72 And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man.

73 And after a while came unto him they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them, for thy speech bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to curse & to swear, saying, I know not the man. And immediatly the cock crew.

75 And Peter remembred the words of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

## CHAP. XXVII.

*1 Christ is delivered bound to Pilate. 3 Judas hangeth himself. 15 Christ is crucified.*

WHen the morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death.

2 And when they had bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governour.

3 ¶ Then Judas which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,

4 Saying, I have sinned, in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What *is that* to us? see thou *to that*.

5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the Temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.

6 And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawfull for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they took counsel, and bought with them the potters field, to bury strangers in

8 Where-

8 Wherefore that field was called, The field of bloud unto this day.

9 ¶ Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremie the Prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value:

10 And gave them for the potters field, as the Lord appointed me.

11 And Jesus stood before the governour: & the governour asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jewes? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

12 And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then saith Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witnesse against thee?

14 And he answered him to never a word, insomuch that the governour marvelled greatly.

15 Now at that feast the governour was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus, which is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for envie they had delivered him.

19 ¶ When he was set down on the judgement seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: For I have suffered many things this day in a dream, because of him.

20 But the chief Priests and elders perswaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

21 The governour answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate saith unto them, What shall I doe then with Jesus, which is called Christ? They all say unto him, Let him be crucified.

23 And the governour said, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cryed out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

24 ¶ When Pilate saw that hee could prevail nothing

nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the bloud of this just person: See ye to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and said, His bloud be on us, and on our children.

26 ¶ Then released he Barabbas unto them: and when he had scourged Jesus, hee delivered him to be crucified:

27 Then the souldiers of the governour took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of souldiers.

28 And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe.

29 And when they had platted a crowne of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail king of the Jews.

30 And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucifie him.

32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his crosse.

33 And when they were come into a place called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a skull,

34 ¶ They gave him vinegerro drink, mingled with gall: and when hee had tasted thereof, hee would not drink.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: That it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.

36 And sitting down, they watched him there,

37 And set up over his head, his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

38 Then were there two theeves crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 And they that passed by, reviled him wagging their heads,

40 And

40 And saying, Thou that destroyest the Temple and buildest it in three dayes, save thy self: if thou be the Son of God, come down from the crosse.
41 Likewise also the chief priests mocking him, with the Scribes and elders, said,
42 He saved others, himself he cannot save: if he be the king of Israel, let him now come down from the crosse, and we will beleeve him.
43 He trusted in God, let him deliver him now if he will have him: For he said, I am the Son of God.
44 The theeves also which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.
45 Now from the sixth houre there was darknesse over all the land unto the ninth houre.
46 And about the ninth houre Jesus cryed with a loud voice, saying, *Eli, Eli, lamasabachthani*, that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?
47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, said, This man calleth for Elias.
48 And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drinke.
49 The rest said, Let be, let us see whither Elias will come to save him.
50 ¶ Jesus, when he had cryed again with a loud voice, yeelded up the ghost.
51 And behold, the vail of the Temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottome, and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent,
52 And the graves were opened, and many bodies of Saints which slept, arose,
53 And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy citie, and appeared unto many.
54 Now when the Centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earth-quake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.
55 And many women were there (beholding afar off) which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministring unto him.
56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedees children.

57 When

57 When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus disciple:

58 He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus: Then Pilate commanded the bodie to be delivered.

59 And when Joseph had taken the bodie, he wrapped it in a cleane linen cloth,

60 And laid it in his own new tombe, which hee had hewen out in the rocke: and hee rolled a great stone to the doore of the Sepulchre, and departed.

61 ¶ And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the Sepulchre.

62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate,

63 Saying, Sir, wee remember that that deceiver said, while hee was yet alive, After three dayes I will rise again.

64 Command therefore that the Sepulchre be made sure untill the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: So the last errour shall be worse then the first.

65 Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch, go your way make it as sure as ye can.

66 So they went and made the Sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

1 *Christs resurrection.* 9 *Hee appeareth to the women,* 16 *and to the disciples,* 19 *and sendeth them to teach and to baptize.*

IN the end of the Sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the weeke, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, to see the Sepulchre.

2 And behold, there was a great earth-quake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled backe the stone from the doore, and sate upon it.

3 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow.

4 And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

5 And the angel answered and said unto the women,

women, Fear not yee: For I know that yee seeke Jesus, which was crucified.

6 He is not here: For hee is risen, as he said: come, see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And go quickly and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead: and behold, he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him, lo, I have told you.

8 And they departed quickly from the Sepulchre, with fear and great joy, and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 ¶ And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came, and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they goe into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

11 ¶ Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the citie, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the Souldiers,

13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept:

14 And if this come to the governours ears, we will perswade him, and secure you.

15 So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Jesus came, and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

19 ¶ Go yee therefore and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Ghost:

20 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway even unto the end of the world. Amen.

THE

# THE GOSPEL ACCORDING To S MARK.

## CHAP. I.

1 *John Baptists office.* 9 *Iesus is baptized,* 12 *tempted,* 14 *preached,* 16 *Calleth Simon and others.* 23 *and cureth many.*

THE beginning of the gospel of Iesus Christ, the Son God,

2 As it is written in the prophets, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

3 The voice of one crying in the wildernesse, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 John did baptize in the wildernesse, and preach the baptisme of repentance, for the remission of sins.

5 And there went out unto him all the land of Judea, and they of Ierusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.

6 And John was clothed with camels hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loynes, and he did eat locusts and wilde hony:

7 And preached, saying, There cometh a mightier then I after mee, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoup down and unloose.

8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

9 And it came to passe in those dayes, that Iesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him.

11 And there came a voice from heaven, saying, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

12 And

12 And immediatly the spirit driveth him into the wildernesse.

13 And he was there in the wildernesse fourty dayes tempted of Satan, and was with the wilde beasts, and the angels ministred unto him.

14 Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdome of God,

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdome of God is at hand: repent yee and beleeve the gospel.

16 Now as hee walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: (for they were fishers)

17 And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

18 And straight way they forsook their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw James the son of Zebedee, & John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.

20 And straight way he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

21 And they went into Capernaum, and straightway on the sabbath-day he entred into the synagogue, and taught.

22 And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the Scribes.

23 And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit, and he cried out,

24 Saying, Let us alone, what have wee to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God.

25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority commandeth hee even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.

28 And immediatly his fame spread abroad

throughout all the region round about Galilee,

29 And forthwith, when they were come out of the Synagogue, they entred into the house of Simon, and Andrew, with James and John.

30 But Simons wives mother lay sick of a fever, and anon they tell him of her.

31 And he came and took her by the hand and lift her up; and immediatly the fever left her, and she ministred unto them.

32 And at even, when the sun did set, they brought unto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with devils.

33 And all the city was gathered together at the doore.

34 And he healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils, and suffered not the devils to speck, because they knew him.

35 And in the morning rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him followed after him.

37 And when they had found him, they said unto him, All men seek for thee.

38 And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth.

39 And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee and cast out devils.

40 And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

41 And Jesus moved with compassion put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will, be thou clean.

42 And assoon as he had spoken immediatly the leprosie departed from him, and he was cleansed.

43 And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent him away;

44 And saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way, shew thy self to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded for a testimony unto them.

45 But hee went out, and began to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the

city, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter.

## CHAP. II.

*Christ healeth one sick of the palsie, 14 calleth Matthew, 15 eateth with publicans and sinners.*

AND again hee entred into Capernaum, after some dayes, and it was noised that hee was in the house.

2 And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no roome to receive them, no not so much as about the doore: and hee preached the word unto them.

3 And they come unto him, bringing one sick of the palsie, which was borne of foure.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for preasse, they uncovered the roofe where hee was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsie lay.

5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsie, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee.

6 But there were certain of the Scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

7 Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only?

8 And immediatly, when Jesus perceived in his spirit, that they so reasoned within themselves, hee said unto them, Why reason yee these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsie, Thy sins be forgiven thee: or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed and walk?

10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (he saith to the sick of the palsie)

11 I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house.

12 And immediatly he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

13 And he went forth again by the sea side, and all the multitude resorted unto him, and hee taught them.

14 And as he passed by, he saw Levi the son of Alpheus sitting at the receipt of custome, and

said unto him, Follow mee. And hee arose and followed him.

15 And it came to passe that as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many Publicanes and sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with Publicanes and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with Publicanes and sinners?

17 When Jesus heard it, hee saith unto them, They that are whole, have no need of the Physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

18 And the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees used to fast: and they come, and say unto him, Why doe the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

19 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them they cannot fast.

20 But the dayes will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

21 No man also seweth a piece of new cloth on an old garment: else the new piece that filled it up, taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worse.

22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles, else the new wine doth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine must be put into new bottles.

23 And it came to passe, that he went through the corn fields on the sabbath-day, & his disciples began as they went, to pluck ȳ ears of corn.

24 And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why doe they on the sabbath-day that which is not lawfull?

25 And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when hee had need and was hungred, he, and they that were with him?

26 How hee went into the house of God in the dayes of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the shew-bread, which is not lawfull to eat, but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him?

27 And

27 And hee said unto them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath:
28 Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

## CHAP. III

1 *The withered hand healed,* 13 *The twelve apostles chosen.* 23 *Blasphemy convinced.*

AND he entred again into the synagogue, and there was a man there which had a withered hand.
2 And they watched him, whither hee would heal him on the Sabbath-day, that they might accuse him.
3 And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.
4 And hee saith unto them, Is it lawfull to do good on the Sabbath-dayes, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? but they held their peace.
5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardnesse of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.
6 And the Pharisees went forth, and straight way took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.
7 But Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea,
8 And from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan, and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him.
9 And hee spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.
10 For he had healed many, insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues.
11 And unclean spirits when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God.
12 And hee straitly charged them, that they should not make him known.
13 And he goeth up into a mountain, & calleth

unto him whom he would: & they came unto hi

14 And he ordained twelve, that they shoul be with him, and that he might send them for to preach:

15 And to have power to heal sicknesses, a to cast out devils.

16 And Simon he surnamed Peter.

17 And James *the son* of Zebedee, and John t brother of James (and hee surnamed them Bo steerges, which is, The sons of thunder)

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholome and Matthew, and Thomas, and James *the son* Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanit

19 And Judas Iscariot, which also betray him: and they went into an house.

20 And the multitude cometh together agai to that they could not so much as eat bread.

21 And when his friends heard *of it*, they we out to lay hold on him: for they said, Hee is b side himself.

22 ¶ And the Scribes which came down fr Jerusalem, said, He hath Beelzebub, and by t prince of the devils casteth he out devils.

23 And he called them unto him, and said un them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a kingdome be divided against it sel that kingdome cannot stand.

25 And if a house bee divided against it sel that house cannot stand.

26 And if Satan rise up against himself, a be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans hous and spoil his goods, except he will first binde t strong man, and then he will spoil his house.

28 Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be for given unto the sons of men, and blasphemie wherewith soever they shall blaspheme:

29 But he that shall blaspheme against the ho ly Ghost, hath never forgiveness, but is in da ger of eternall damnation:

30 Because they said, He hath an unclean spiri

31 ¶ Therecame then his brethren & his mothe and standing without, sent unto him, calling him.

32 And the multitude sat about him: and they said unto him, Behold thy mother and thy bre thren without seek for thee.

33 An

33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?

34 And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.

35 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 The parable of the sower. 14 The meaning thereof. 26 Of the seed growing secretly, 30 Of the mustard seed.*

AND hee began again to teach by the sea side: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sat in the sea, and the whole multitude was by the sea, on the land.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken, Behold, there went out a sower to sow.

4 And it came to passe as hee sowed, some fell by the way side, and the fowls of the aire came, and devoured it up.

5 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth, and immediatly it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth.

6 But when the sun was up it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up and chocked it, and it yeelded no fruit.

8 And other fell on good ground, and did yeeld fruit that sprang up and increased, and brought forth some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred.

9 And he said unto them, He that hath eares to hear, let him heare.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve, asked of him the parable.

11 And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mysterie of the kingdome of God: but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables:

12 That seeing they may see, and not perceive, and hearing they may hear, and not understand: lest at any time they should bee converted, and their sins should be forgiven them.

13 And he said unto them, Know yee not this parable? & how then will you know all parables?

14 ¶ The sower soweth the word.

15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown, but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediatly, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

16 And these are they likewise which are sowen on stony ground, who when they have heard the word, immediatly receive it with gladnesse:

17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the words sake, immediatly they are offended.

18 And these are they which are sowen among thorns: such as hear the word,

19 ¶ And the cars of this world and the deceitfulnesse of riches, and the lusts of other things entring in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitfull.

20 And these are they which are sowen on good ground, such as hear the word and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirty fold, some sixty, and some an hundred.

21 ¶ And he said unto them, Is a candle brought to be put under a bushel, or under a bed? and not to be set on a candlestick?

22 For there is nothing hid which shall not be manifested: neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

23 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

24 And he said unto them, Take heed what you hear: with what measure ye mete it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more bee given.

25 For hee that hath, to him shall be given: and hee that hath not, from him shall bee taken even that which he hath.

26 ¶ And he said, So is the kingdome of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground,

27 And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how.

28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself, first the blade, then the eare, after that the full corn in the eare.

29 But

29 But when the fruit is brought forth, Immediatly he putteth in the ficle, because the harvest is come.

30 ¶ And hee said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdome of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it?

31 It is like a grain of mustard-seed; which when it is sown in the earth, is lesse then all the seeds that be in the earth.

32 But when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater then all herbs, and shooteth out great branches, so that the fowls of the aire may lodge under the shadow of it.

33 And with many such parables spake hee the word unto them as they were able to hear it.

34 But without a parable spake hee not unto them: and when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.

35 And the same day when the even was come, he saith unto them, Let us passe over unto the other side.

36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as hee was in the ship, and there were also with him other little ships.

37 And there arose a great storm of winde, & the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And he was in the hinder part of the ship asleep on a pillow: & they awoke him and say unto him Master, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he arose, and rebuked the winde, and said unto the Sea, Peace, be still: and the winde ceased, and there was a great calme.

40 And he said unto them, Why are ye so fearfull? how is it that yee have no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the winde and the sea obey him?

## CHAP. V.

1 *Christ delivering the possessed of the legion of devils:* 13 *They enter into the swine:* 35 *Iairus his daughter.*

AND they came over unto the other side of the Sea, into the countrey of the Gadarens.

2 And when he was come out of the ship, immediatly there met him out of the tombes a man with an uncleane spirit,

3 Who had his dwelling among the tombs: and no man could binde him, no not with chaines.
4 Because that hee had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chaines had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him.
5 And alwayes night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones.
6 But when hee saw Jesus afar off, he came and worshipped him,
7 And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.
8 (For he said unto him, Come out of the man thou unclean spirit)
9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is legion for we are many.
10 And he besought him much, that hee would not send them away out of the country.
11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains, a great herd of swine feeding.
12 And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.
13 And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entred into the swine, and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the sea.
14 And they that fed the swine fled, and told it in the city, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done.
15 And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right minde, and they were afraid.
16 And they that saw it, told them how it befell to him that was possessed with the devil, and also concerning the swine.
17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coasts.
18 And when he was come into the ship he that had been possessed with the devil, prayed him that he might be with him.

19 How-

19 Howbeit, Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him. Go home, to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And hee departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvell.

21 And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him, and he was nigh unto the sea.

22 And behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name, and when hee saw him, he fell at his feet,

23 And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death. *I pray thee* come and lay thy hands on her that shee may bee healed, and she shall live.

24 And Jesus went with him, and much people followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a certain woman which had an issue of bloud twelve years,

26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that shee had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27 When shee had heard of Jesus, came in the preasse behinde, and touched his garment.

28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

29 And straight way the fountain of her bloud was dried up: and shee felt in her body that shee was healed of that plague.

30 And Jesus immedialy knowing in himself, that vertue had gone out of him, turned him about in the preasse, and said, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou Who touched me?

32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

34 And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole, go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35 While he yet spake, there came from the ruler

ler of the synagogues *house*, certain which said, Thy daughter is dead, why troublest thou the Master any further?

36 Assoon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only beleeve.

37 And hee suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.

38 And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And when hee was come in, hee saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorn: but when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entreth in where the damsel was lying.

41 And hee took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, *Talitha-cumi*, which is being interpreted, Damsel (I say unto thee) arise.

42 And straightway the damsel arose, and walked, for she was of the age of twelve yeares: and they were astonished with a great astonishment.

43 And he charged them straitly that no man should know it: and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

## CHAP. VI.

1 *Christ is contemned of his countreymen.* 7 *John Baptist is beheaded.* 48 *Christ walketh on the sea* 53 *and healeth all that touch him.*

AND he went out from thence and came into his own countrey, & his disciples follow him.

2 And when the Sabbath-day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisedome is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

4 But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without

without honour, but in his own countrey, and among his own kin, and in his own house.

5 And hee could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them.

6 And he marvelled because of their unbelief. And he went round about the villages teaching.

7 ¶ And hee calleth unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two, and gave them power over unclean spirits,

8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staff only: no scrip, no bread, no money in their purse:

9 But bee shod with sandals: and not put on two coats.

10 And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

11 And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when yee depart thence shake off the dust under your feet, for a testimonie against them: verily I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgement, then for that city.

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

13 And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oyl many that were sick, and healed them.

14 And king Herod heard *of him*, (for his name was spread abroad) & he said that John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

15 Others said, That it is Elias: And others said, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

16 But when Herod heard *thereof* he said, It is John whom I beheaded, he is risen from ỹ dead.

17 For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife, for hee had married her.

18 For John had said unto Herod, It is not lawfull for thee to have thy brothers wife.

19 Therefore Herodias had a quarrell against him, & would have killed him, but she could not.

20 For Herod feared John, knowing that hee was a just man and an holy, and observed him

and

and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birth day made a supper to his lords, high captains and chief estates of Galilee:

22 And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel, ask of mee whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee.

23 And hee sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdome.

24 And shee went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist.

25 And she came in straight way with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me by and by in a charger, the head of John the Baptist.

26 And the king was exceeding sory, *yet* for his oaths sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her.

27 And immediatly the king sent an executioner, and commanded his head to bee brought, and he went, and beheaded him in the prison,

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel and the damsel gave it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard *of it*, they came and took up his corps, and laid it in a tomb.

30 And the apostles gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said unto them, Come ye your selves apart into a desert place, and rest a while: for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

32 And they departed into a desert place by ship privately.

33 And the people saw them departing, and many knew him & ran a foot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

34 And Jesus, when hee came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shep-

herd:

herd: and he began to teach them many things.

35 And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time is far passed,

36 Send them away, that they may go into the countrey round about & into ỹ villages, and buy themselves bread: for they have nothing to eat.

37 Hee answered and said unto them, Give yee them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundreth penie-worth of bread, and give them to eat?

38 He saith unto them How many loaves have ye? go and see. And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes.

39 And hee commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grasse.

40 And they sat down in ranks by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave them to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all.

42 And they did all eat and were filled.

43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaves, were about five thousand men.

45 And straight way he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before unto Bethsaida, while he sent away ỹ people

46 And when hee had sent them away, hee departed into a mountain to pray.

47 And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And hee saw them toyling in rowing: (for the winde was contrary unto them) and about the fourth watch of the night hee cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled) And immediately he talked with them, & saith unto them, Be of good cheer, it is I, be not afraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the ship and

the

the winde ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondred.

52 For they considered not *the miracle* of the loaves, for their heart was hardened.

53 And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Genesareth, & drew to the shore.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they know him,

55 And ran through that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds, those that were sicke, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entred, into villages, or cities, or countrey, they laid the sicke in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him, were made whole.

## CHAP. VII.

1 *The Pharisees finde fault at the disciples, for eating with unwashen hands.* 14 *Meat defileth not the man.*

THen came together unto him the Pharisees and certain of the Scribes, which came from Jerusalem.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled (that is to say, with unwashen) hands, they found fault.

3 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cup and pots, brasen vessels, and of tables.

5 Then the Pharisees & Scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?

6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

7 Howbeit in vaine do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like thing ye do.

9 And

9 And hee ſaid vnto them, Full well yé reiect the commandment of God, that yee may keep your own tradition.

10 For Moſes ſaid, Honour thy father and thy mother: and Whoſo curſeth father or mother, let him die the death.

11 But ye ſay, if a man ſhall ſay to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to ſay, a gift, by whatſoever thou mightest be profited by me: *hee ſhall be free.*

12 And ye ſuffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother:

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition which ye have delivered and many ſuch like things do ye.

14 ¶ And when he had called all the people vnto him, hee ſaid vnto them, Hearken vnto me every one of you, and vnderſtand.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entring into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, thoſe are they that defile the man.

16 If any man have eares to hear, let him hear.

17 And when he was entred into the houſe from the people, his diſciples aſked him concerning the parable.

18 And he ſaith vnto them, Are ye ſo without vnderſtanding alſo? Do yee not perceiue, that whatſoever thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him,

19 Becauſe it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

20 And he ſaid, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed euil thoghts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

22 Theeues couetouſneſſe, wickedneſſe, deceit, laſciuiouſneſſe, an euil eye, blaſphemie, pride, fooliſhneſſe:

23 All theſe euil things come from within, and defile the man.

24 ¶ And from thence he aroſe, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entred into an houſe, and would haue no man know it: but he could not be hid,

25 For

25 For a certain woman whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet:

26 (The woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation) and shee besought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

27 But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it unto the dogs.

28 And shee answered and said unto him, Yes Lord, yet the dogs under the table eat of the childrens crums.

29 And he said unto her, For this saying, go thy way, the devil is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when shee was come to her house, shee found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

31 ¶ And again departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring unto him one that was deaf and had an impediment in his speech: and they beseech him to put his hand upon him.

33 And he took him aside from the multitude and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue.

34 And looking up to heaven, hee sighed and saith unto him Ephphata, that is, Bee opened.

35 And straight way his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

36 And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it,

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: hee maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

## CHAP. VIII.

*1 Christ feedeth the people miraculously: 10 refuseth to give a signe to the Pharisees:*

IN those dayes the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples unto him, and saith unto them,

2 I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three dayes, and have nothing to eat:

3 And

3 And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for divers of them came from far.

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfie these men with bread here in the wildernesse?

5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven.

6 And hee commanded the people to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before them: and they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: & he blessed and commanded to set them also before them.

8 So they did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven baskets.

9 And they that had eaten were about foure thousand: and he sent them away.

10 ¶ And straight way hee entred into a ship with his disciples, and came unto the parts of Dalmanutha.

11 And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a signe from heaven, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a signe? verily I say unto you, There shall no signe be given to this generation.

13 And he left them, and entring into the ship again, departed to the other side.

14 ¶ Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more then one loaf.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod.

16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is* because we have no bread.

17 And when Jesus knew *it*, he saith unto them, Why reason ye, because yee have no bread? perceive ye not yet, neither understand? have ye your heart yet hardened?

18 Having eyes, see yee not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember?

19 When

19 When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, twelve.

20 And when the seven among foure thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, seven.

21 And hee said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?

22 ¶ And he cometh to Bethsaida, and they bring a blinde man unto him, and besought him to touch him.

23 And hee took the blinde man by the hand, and led him out of the town, and when hee had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw ought.

24 And he looked up, and said, I see men as trees, walking.

25 After that he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was restored, and saw every man clearly.

26 And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the town.

27 ¶ And Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the townes of Cesarea Philippi: and by the way he asked his disciples, saying unto them, Whom do men say that I am?

28 And they answered, John the Baptist: but some say, Elias, and others, one of the prophets.

29 And hee saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter answereth and saith unto him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

31 And hee began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and of the chief priests, & Scribes, and be killed, and after three dayes rise again.

32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

33 And when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for thou savourest not ȣ things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

34 ¶ And when hee had called the people unto him, with his disciples also, hee said unto them, Who-

Whosoever will come after mee, let him deny himself, and take up his crosse, and follow mee.

35 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it, but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospels, the same shall save it.

36 For what shall it profit a man, if hee shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

37 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

38 Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of mee, and of my words, in this adulterous and sinfull generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed when hee cometh in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels.

## CHAP. IX.

*Jesus is transfigured. 30 Hee foretelleth his death and resurrection. 33 And giveth divers instructions to his disciples.*

AND he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdome of God come with power.

2 ¶ And after six dayes, Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves; and he was transfigured before them.

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow: so as no fuller on earth can white them.

4 And there appeared unto them Elias, with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here, and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For hee wist not what to say, for they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.

8 And suddenly when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them ‖ they should tell no man what things

things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen from the dead.

10 And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.

11 ¶ And they asked him, saying, Why say the Scribes that Elias must first come?

12 And he answered and told them, Elias verily cometh first, and restoreth all things, and how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.

13 But I say unto you, that Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.

14 ¶ And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the Scribes questioning with them.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted him.

16 And he asked the Scribes, What question ye with them?

17 And one of the multitude answered and said, Master, I have brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit:

18 And wheresoever he taketh him he teareth him: and he foameth and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away: & I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they could not.

19 He answered him, and saith, O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you, how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straight way the spirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a child.

22 And oft times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

24 And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe, help thou mine unbelief.

25 When

25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb & deaf spirit, I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And *the spirit* cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him, and hee was as one dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up, and he arose.

28 And when hee was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he said unto them, This kinde can come forth by nothing but by prayer and fasting.

30 ¶ And they departed thence and passed through Galilee, and he would not that any man should know it.

31 For hee taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.

32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.

33 ¶ And hee came to Capernaum, and being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among yourselves, by the way?

34 But they held their peace, for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who *should be* the greatest.

35 And he sat down and called the twelve, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.

36 And he took a childe, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them,

37 Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receiveth me: & whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

38 ¶ And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us, and we forbad him, because he followeth not us.

39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not, for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

40 For he that is not against us, is on our part.

41 For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink, in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, hee shall not lose his reward.

42 And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that beleeve in me, it is better for him, that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

43 And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, then having two hands, to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

44 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for the to enter halt into life, then having two feet, to bee cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

46 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

47 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdome of God with one eye, then having two eyes to be cast into hell fire:

48 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

49 For every one shall bee salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt.

50 Salt *is* good: but if the salt have lost his saltnesse, wherewith will you season it? Have salt in your selves, and have peace one with another.

## CHAP. X.

2 *Of divorcement.* 13 *The danger of riches.*

AND hee arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judea by the farther side of Jordan: and the people resort unto him again, and as he was wont, he taught them again.

2 ¶ And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife? tempting him.

3 And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.

5 And Jesus answered & said unto them For the hardnes of your heart, he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation, God
made them male and female.
7 For this cause shall a man leave his Father
and mother, and cleave to his wife,
8 And they twain shall bee one flesh: So then
they are no more twain, but one flesh.
9 What therefore God hath joyned together,
let not man put asunder.
10 And in the house his disciples asked him a-
gaine of the same matter.
11 And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall
put away his wife, and marry another, commit-
teth adulterie against her.
12 And if a woman shal put away her husband &
be married to another, she committeth adulterie.
13 ¶ And they brought young children to him,
that he should touch them, and his disciples re-
buked those that brought them.
14 But when Jesus saw it, he was much displea-
sed, and said unto them, Suffer the little children
to come unto me, and forbid them not: For of
such is the kingdome of God.
15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not
receive the kingdome of God as a little childe,
he shall not enter therein.
16 And hee took them up in his armes, put his
hands upon them, and blessed them.
17 ¶ And when he was gone forth into the way,
there came one running, and kneeled to him, and
asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I
may inherit eternall life?
18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me
good? there is no man good, but one *that is*, God.
19 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not
commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do
not bear false witnesse, Defraud not, Honour thy
father and mother.
20 And he answered and said unto him, Master,
all these have I observed from my youth.
21 Then Jesus beholding him, loved him, and
said unto him One thing thou lackest, go thy way,
sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poore,
and thou shalt have treasure in heaven, and come,
take up the crosse, and follow me.
22 And he was sad at that saying, and went a-
way grieved: For he had great possessions

22 ¶ And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdome of God!

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

27 And Jesus looking upon them, saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

28 ¶ Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

29 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake and the gospels

30 But he shall receive an hundred fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions: and in the world to come eternall life.

31 But many that are first, shall be last: and the last first.

32 ¶ And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem: and Jesus went before them, and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid: and he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him,

33 Saying, Behold we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests and unto the Scribes: and they shall condemne him to death and shall deliver him to the Gentiles:

34 And they shall mock him and shall scourge him, and shall spite upon him, and shall kill him, and the third day he shall rise again.

35 ¶ And James and John the sons of Zebedee come unto him, saying Master, we would that thou shouldst doe for us whatsoever we shall desire.

36 And hee said unto them, What would yee that I should doe for you?

37 They said unto him, Grant unto us that we may

may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.

38 But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can yee drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with?

39 And they said unto him, We can. And Jesus said unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptisme that I am baptized withall, shall ye be baptized:

40 But to sit on my right hand and on my left hand, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given* to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

42 But Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over ℣ Gentiles, exercise Lordship over them & their great ones exercise authority upon them.

43 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister

44 And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all.

45 For even the Son of man came not to be ministred unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransome for many.

46 ¶ And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples, and a great number of people, blinde Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sate by the high way side begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but hee cryed the more a great deal, Thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blinde man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And he casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.

51 And Jesus answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? The blinde man said unto him, Lord, that I might receive my sight.

52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way, thy

23 ¶ And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdome of God!

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

27 And Jesus looking upon them, saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

28 ¶ Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

29 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake and the gospels,

30 But he shall receive an hundred fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions: and in the world to come eternall life.

31 But many that are first, shall be last: and the last first.

32 ¶ And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem: and Jesus went before them, and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid: and he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him,

33 Saying, Behold we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests and unto the Scribes: and they shall condemne him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles:

34 And they shall mock him and shall scourge him, and shall spite upon him, and shall kill him, and the third day he shall rise again.

35 ¶ And James and John the sons of Zebedee come unto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldst doe for us whatsoever we shall desire.

36 And hee said unto them, What would ye that I should doe for you?

37 They said unto him, Grant unto us that we

may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.

38 But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can yee drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with?

39 And they said unto him, We can. And Jesus said unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of: and with the baptisme that I am baptized withall, shall ye be baptized:

40 But to sit on my right hand and on my left hand, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given* to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

42 But Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over ȳ Gentiles, exercise Lordship over them, & their great ones exercise authority upon them.

43 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shalbe your minister

44 And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all.

45 For even the Son of man came not to be ministred unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransome for many.

46 ¶ And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples, and a great number of people, blinde Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sate by the high way side begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but hee cryed the more a great deal, Thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blinde man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And he casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.

51 And Jesus answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? The blinde man said unto him, Lord, that I might receive my sight.

52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way, thy

Faith hath made thee whole: & immediatly he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

## CHAP. XI.

*1 Christ rideth with triumph into Jerusalem. 14 Hee cursseth the fruitlesse leafe tree.*

AND when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage, and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples,

2 And saith unto them, Go your way into the village over against you, and assoon as ye be entred into it, ye shall finde a colt tyed, whereon never man sate, loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say unto you, Why doe ye this? Say ye that the Lord hath need of him, and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tyed by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met: and they loose him.

5 And certain of them that stood there, said unto them, What do ye loosing the colt?

6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him, and he sate upon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches of the trees, and strewed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, saying, *Hosanna*, blessed is hee that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

10 Blessed be the kingdome of our Father David, that cometh in the Name of the Lord, *Hosanna* in the highest.

11 And Jesus entred into Jerusalem, and into the Temple, and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the even-tide was come, he went out unto Bethanie with the twelve.

12 ¶ And on the morrow when they were come from Bethanie he was hungry.

13 And seeing a fig-tree afar off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might finde any thing thereon: and when hee came to it, hee found nothing but leaves; For the time of figs was not yet.

14 And Jesus answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it.

15 ¶ And

15 ¶ And they come to Jerusalem: and Jesus went into the Temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the Temple, and overthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seats of them that sold doves:

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any vessel through the Temple.

17 And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but yee have made it a den of theeves.

18 And the Scribes and chiefe priests heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when even was come, hee went out of the citie.

20 ¶ And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig-tree dried up from the roots.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance, saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst, is withered away.

22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, Have faith in God.

23 For verily I say unto you, that whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Bee thou removed, and be thou cast into the Sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall beleeve that those things which he saith shall come to passe, hee shall have whatsoever he saith.

24 Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire when ye pray, beleeve that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.

25 And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.

26 But if you do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven, forgive your trespasses.

27 ¶ And they came again to Jerusalem, and as he was walking in the Temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the Scribes, and the elders,

28 And say unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authoritie to do these things?

29 And Jesus answered & said unto them, I will also ask of you one question, and answer me, and I

will tell you by what authority I do these things.

30 The baptisme of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me.

31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not beleeve him?

32 But if we shall say, Of men, they feared the people: For all men counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

33 And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering saith unto them, Neither doe I tell you by what authority I doe these things.

## CHAP. XII.

1 *The parable of the vineyard.* 13 *Touching paying of tribute,* 18 *And the resurrection.*

AND hee began to speak unto them by parables. A certaine man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and digged a *place for* the wine-fat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a farre country.

2 And at the season hee sent to the husbandmen a servant, that hee might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 And they caught him and beat him, and sent him away emptie.

4 And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And again, he sent another, & him they killed: and many others, beating some, and killing some.

6 Having yet therefore one Son, his well beloved, hee sent him also last unto them, saying, They will reverence my Son.

7 But those husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heir, come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they took him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shall therefore the Lord of the vineyard do? hee will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

10 And have yee not read this Scripture? The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner.

11 This was the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes.

12 And

12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people, for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

13 ¶ And they send unto him certaine of the Pharisees, and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words.

14 And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: For thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawfull to give tribute to Cesar, or not?

15 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he knowing their hypocrisie, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a peny, that I may see it.

16 And they brought it: and he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Cesars.

17 And Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Cesar, the things that are Cesars & to God the things that are Gods. And they marvelled at him.

18 ¶ Then came unto him ¶ Sadduces which say there is no resurrection & they asked him saying,

19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a mans brother die and leave his wife behinde him, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

20 Now there were seven brethren: and the first tooke a wife, and dying, left no seed.

21 And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed, and the third likewise.

22 And the seven had her, and left no seed: last of all the woman died also.

23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? For the seven had her to wife.

24 And Jesus answering said unto them Do ye not therefore erre, because ye know not the Scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage: but are as the angels which are in heaven.

26 And as touching the dead, that they rise: have ye not read in the book of Moses how in the bush God spake unto him saying I am ¶ God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?

27 He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore doe greatly erre.

28 ¶ And one of the Scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, which is the first commandement of all?

29 And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandements is, Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord:

30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: This is the first commandement.

31 And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self: there is none other commandement greater then these.

32 And the Scribe said unto him, Well Master, thou hast said the truth: For there is one God, and there is none other but he.

33 And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more then all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices.

34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, He said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durst aske him any question.

35 ¶ And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the Temple, How say the Scribes that Christ is the Son of David?

36 For David himself said by the holy Ghost, The LORD said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy foot-stoole.

37 David therefore himself calleth him Lord, and whence is he then his Son? and the common people heard him gladly.

38 ¶ And he said unto them in his doctrine, Beware of the Scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the market-places.

39 And the chief seats in the Synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts.

40 Which devoure widows houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: These shall receive greater damnation.

41 ¶ And Jesus sat over against the treasury, and beheld

beheld how the people cast money into the treasury: and many that were rich cast in much.

42 And there came a certaine poore widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing.

43 And hee called unto him his disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say you, That this poore widow hath cast more in, then all they which have cast into the treasury.

44 For all they did cast in of their abundance: but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.

## CHAP. XIII.

*2 The destruction of the temple. 9 Persecution for the gospel. 24 Great calamities to the Iewes.*

AND as he went out of the Temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings *are here.*

2 And Jesus answering said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another, *that* shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sate upon the mount of Olives, over against the Temple, Peter and James, and John, and Andrew asked him privately,

4 Tell us, when shall these things bee? and what shall be the signe when all these things shall be fulfilled?

5 And Jesus answering them, began to say, Take heed lest any man deceive you.

6 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am *Christ*: and shall deceive many.

7 And when ye shall hear of warres, and rumours of warres, beye not troubled: For *such things* must needs be, but the end *shall* not *be* yet.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome: and there shall be earthquakes in divers places, & there shall be famines, and troubles: these are the beginnings of sorrows.

9 ¶ But take heed to your selves: For they shall deliver you up to conncels, and in the Synagogues ye shall be beaten, and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimonie against them.

10 And the gospel must first be published among all nations.

11 But when they shall leade you, and deliver you up, take no thought before-hand what ye shal

speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoeuer shall be given you in that houre, that speake ye. For it is not ye that speak, but the holy Ghost.

12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son: and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

13 And yee shall bee hated of all men for my Names sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saued.

14 ¶ But when yee shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not, (let him that readeth, understand) then let them that bee in Judea flee to the mountains:

15 And let him that is on the house top, not go down into the house, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his house.

16 And let him that is in the field, not turne back againe for to take up his garment.

17 But wo to them that are with childe, and to them that give suck in those dayes:

18 And pray yee that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For in those dayes shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created, unto this time, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lord had shortened those dayes, no flesh should be saued: but for the elects sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the dayes.

21 And then, if any man shall say to you, Lo, here is Christ, or lo, he is there: beleeve him not.

22 For false Christs, and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signes and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect.

23 But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.

24 ¶ But in those dayes, after that tribulation, the Sun shall be darkened, and the Moon shall not give her light.

25 And the stars of heaven shall fall, and the powers that *are* in heaven shall be shaken.

26 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds, with great power and glory.

27 And then shall he send his angels, and shall gather

gather together his elect from the foure windes from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.

28 Now learne a parable of the fig-tree, When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that Summer is neare:

29 So ye in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to passe, know that it is nigh, even at the doores.

30 Verily I say unto you, That this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done.

31 Heaven and earth shall passe away: but my words shall not passe away.

32 ¶ But of that day and that houre knoweth no man, no not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

33 Take yeheed, watch and pray: For ye know not when the time is.

34 *For the Son of man is* as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authoritie to his servants, and to every man his worke and commanded the porter to watch:

35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cock crowing, or in the morning)

36 Lest coming suddenly, he finde you sleeping.

37 And what I say unto you, I say unto all, Watch.

## CHAP. XIIII.

1 *A conspiracie against Christ.* 3 *A woman powreth ointment on his head.* 10 *Judas selleth him.*

AFter two dayes, was *the feast of* the passeover, and *of* unleavened bread: and the chiefe priests and the Scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

2 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproare among the people.

3 ¶ And being *in* Bethanie, in the house of Simon the leper, as he sate at meat there came a woman, having *an* alabaster box of ointment, of spikenard, very precious, and she brake the box and powred it on his head.

4 And there were some that had indignation within themselves, and said, Why was this waste of the ointment made?

5 For it might have been sold for more than

three hundreth pence and have been given to the poorer: and they murmured againſt her.

6 And Jeſus ſaid, Let her alone, why trouble ye her? ſhe hath wrought a good work on me.

7 For ye have the poore with you always, and whenſoever ye will ye may do them good: but me ye have not always.

8 She hath done what ſhe could: ſhe hath come afore hand to anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verily I ſay unto you, Whereſoever this goſpel ſhall bee preached throughout the whole world, this alſo that ſhe hath done ſhall be ſpoken of, for a memoriall of her.

10 ¶ And Judas Iſcariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief prieſts, to betray him unto them.

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promiſed to give him money. And hee ſought how he might conveniently betray him.

12 ¶ And the firſt day of unleavened bread, when they killed the paſſeover, his diſciples ſaid unto him Where wilt thou that wee go and prepare, that thou mayeſt eat the paſſeover?

13 And he ſendeth forth two of his diſciples, and ſaith unto them, Go yee into the city, and there ſhall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: Follow him.

14 And whereſoever he ſhall go in, ſay ye to the good man of the houſe, The Maſter ſaith, Where is the gueſt-chamber, where I ſhall eat the paſſeover, with my diſciples?

15 And he will ſhew you a large upper roome furniſhed and prepared: there make ready for us.

16 And his diſciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had ſaid unto them: and they made ready the paſſeover.

17 And in the evening he cometh with the twelve.

18 And as they ſate, and did eat, Jeſus ſaid, Verily I ſay unto you, One of you which eateth with me, ſhall betray me.

19 And they began to be ſorrowfull, and to ſay unto him, one by one, Is it I? and another ſaid, Is it I?

20 And he anſwered and ſaid unto them, It is one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the diſh.

21 The Son of man indeed goeth as it is written of him: but wo to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed: good were it for that man if he had never been borne.

22 ¶ And

22 ¶ And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gave to them, and said, Take, eat this is my bodie.

23 And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them: & they all drank of it.

24 And hee said unto them, This is my blond of the new Testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdome of God.

26 ¶ And when they had sung an hymne, they went out into the mount of Olives.

27 And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: For it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

28 But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

29 But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet *will* not I.

30 And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this day even in this night before the cocke crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.

31 But hee spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

32 And they came to a place which was named Gethsemani, and he saith to his disciples, Sit yee here, while I shall pray.

33 And he taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heavy.

34 And saith unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowfull unto death: Tarry ye here, and watch.

35 And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible the houre might passe from him.

36 And he said, Abba, Father, All things are possible unto thee, take away this cup from me: nevertheless, not what I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And hee cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter Simon, sleepest thou? couldst not thou watch one houre?

38 Watch ye & pray, lest ye enter into temptation: the spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weak.

39 And again he went away, & prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And

40 And when he returned, he found them asleep again, (for their eyes were heavie) neither wist they what to answer him.

41 And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the houre is come, behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise up, let us go, loe, hee that betrayeth me is at hand.

43 ¶ And immediatly while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves from the chief priests and the Scribes, and the elders.

44 And he that betrayed him, had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kisse, that same is he, take him, and lead him away safely.

45 And assoon as he was come, he goeth straight way to him, and saith, Master, Master, & kissed him.

46 ¶ And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

47 And one of them that stood by, drew a sword and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his eare.

48 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Are ye come out as against a thiefe, with swords and with staves to take me?

49 I was daily with you in the Temple, teaching, and ye took me not: but the Scriptures must be fulfilled.

50 And they all forsook him and fled.

51 And there followed him a certaine young man, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body, and the young men laid hold on him.

52 And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

53 ¶ And they led Jesus away to the high priest, and with him were assembled all the chief priests and the elders, and the Scribes.

54 And Peter followed him a far off, even into the palace of the high priest: and he sate with the servants, and warmed himselfe at the fire.

55 And the chiefe priests, and all the councel sought for witnesse against Jesus to put him to death, and found none.

56 For many bare false witnesse against him, but their witnesse agreed not together.

57 And

57 And there arose certain, and bare false wit-
nesse against him, saying.

58 We heard him say, I will destroy this Temple that is made with hands, and within three dayes I will build another made without hands.

59 But neither so did their witnesses agree together.

60 And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witnesse against thee?

61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the blessed?

62 And Jesus said, I am: and yee shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

63 Then the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses?

64 Ye have heard the blasphemy: what thinke yt? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

65 And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophesie: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands.

66 ¶ And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there cometh one of the maids of the high priest.

67 And when she saw Peter warming himselfe, she looked upon him, and said, And thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth.

68 But he denied saying, I know not, neither understand I what thou savest. And he went out into the porch. and the cocke crew.

69 And a maid saw him again and began to say to them that stood by. This is one of them.

70 And he denied it again. And a little after, they that stood by said again to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: For thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agreeth thereto.

71 But he began to curse and to swear, saying, I know not this man of whom ye speak.

72 And the second time the cocke crew: and Peter called to minde the word that Jesus said unto him, Before the cocke crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrise. And when he thought thereon, he wept.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XV.

1 *Jesus brought bound and accused before Pilate.* 15 *delivered to be crucified,* 27 *hanged between two theeves,* 43 *and is honourably buried.*

AND straightway in the morning the chiefe priests held a consultation with the elders & Scribes and the whole councel, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, & delivered him to Pilate.

2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the king of the Jews? And he answering, said unto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the chief Priests accused him of many things: but he answered nothing.

4 And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? Behold, how many things they witnesse against thee.

5 But Jesus yet answered nothing, so that Pilate marvelled.

6 Now at that feast he released unto them one prisoner whomsoever they desired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.

8 And the multitude crying aloud, began to desire *him to do* as he had ever done unto them.

9 But Pilate answered them, saying, Will yee that I release unto you the king of the Jews?

10 (For hee knew that the chiefe Priests had delivered him for envie.)

11 But the chief Priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

12 And Pilate answered and said again unto them, What will ye then that I shall doe unto him whom ye call the king of the Jews?

13 And they cryed out again, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate said unto them, Why, what evil hath he done? And they cryed out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him.

15 ¶ And so Pilate willing to content the people released Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jesus, when hee had scourged him, to bee crucified.

16 And the souldiers led him away into the hall, called Pretorium, and they call together the whole band,

17 And

17 And they clothed him with purple, and plaited a crown of thorns, and put it about his head,
18 And began to salute him, Hail king of the Jews.
19 And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.
20 And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.
21 And they compell one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the countrey, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his crosse.
22 And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of a scull.
23 And they gave him to drink, wine mingled with myrrhe: but he received it not.
24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take.
25 And it was the third houre, and they crucified him.
26 And the superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS.
27 And with him they crucified two theeves, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.
28 And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbred with the transgressours.
29 And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, & saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes,
30 Save thy self, and come down from the crosse
31 Likewise also, the chief priests mocking, said among themselves with the Scribes, Hee saved others, himself he cannot save.
32 Let Christ the king of Israel descend now from the crosse, that we may see and beleeve: and they that were crucified with him, reviled him.
33 And when the sixth houre was come, there was darkenesse over the whole land, untill the ninth houre.
34 And at the ninth houre Jesus cryed with a loud voice, saying, *Eloi. Eloi, lama sabachthani?* which is, being interpreted, My God, My God, why hast thou forsaken me?
35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard

heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ran, and filled a spunge full of vi-
neger, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink,
saying, Let alone, let us see whether Elias will
come to take him downe.

37 And Jesus cryed with a loud voice, and gave
up the ghost.

38 And the vaile of the Temple was rent in
twaine from the top to the bottome.

39 ¶ And when the centurion which stood over
against him, saw that he so cryed out, and gave up
the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the Sonne of
God.

40 There were also women looking on a far
off, among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary
the mother of James the lesse, and of Joses, and
Salome.

41 Who also when he was in Galilee, followed
him, and ministered unto him, and many other wo-
men which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

42 ¶ And now when the even was come, (be-
cause it was the preparation, that is, the day be-
fore the Sabbath)

43 Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable coun-
seller, which also waited for the kingdome of
God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and
craved the body of Jesus.

44 And Pilate marvelled if hee were already
dead, and calling unto him the centurion, he ask-
ed him whether he had beene any while dead.

45 And when he knew it of the centurion, he
gave the body to Joseph.

46 And he bought fine linen, and tooke him
down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him
in a Sepulchre, which was hewen out of a rocke,
and rolled a stone unto the doore of the Sepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother
of Joses, beheld where he was laid.

## CHAP. XVI.

*1 Christs resurrection. 9 He appeareth to Mary Magdalene and others. 15 Sendeth forth his Apostles, 19 and ascendeth into heaven.*

AND when the Sabbath was past, Mary Mag-
dalene, and Mary the mother of James and
Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might
come and anoint him.

2 And

3 And very early in the morning, the first day of the week, they came unto the Sepulchre at the rising of the Sun.

3 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the doore of the Sepulchre?

4 (And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away) for it was very great.

5 And entring into the Sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment, and they were affrighted.

6 And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye seeke Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

7 But go your way, tell his disciples and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him, as he said unto you.

8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the Sepulchre; for they trembled, and were amazed, neither said they any thing to any man: for they were afraid.

9 ¶ Now when *Jesus* was risen early, the first day of the week, hee appeared first to Mary Magdalene out of whom he had cast seven devils.

10 And she went and told them that had beene with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they had heard that hee was alive, and had been seen of her, beleeved not.

12 After that he appeared in another forme unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the countrey.

13 And they went and told it unto the residue: neither beleeved they them.

14 ¶ Afterward he appeared unto the eleven, as they sat at meat, & upbraided them with their unbelief & hardnesse of heart, because they beleeved not them which had seen him after hee was risen.

15 And he said unto them, Go yee into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.

16 He that beleeveth & is baptized shall be saved; but he that beleeveth not, shall be damned.

17 And these signes shall follow them that beleeve: In my Name shall they cast out devils, they shall speake with new tongues.

18 They shall take up serpents, and if they drink any

any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them, they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

19 ¶ So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sate on the right hand of God.

20 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signes following.

# The Gospel according to Saint LUKE.

## CHAP. I.

*1 Lukes preface. 5 The conception of John Baptist. 26 and of Christ. 59 The circumcision of John.*

FOrasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely beleeved among us,

2 Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eye-witnesses, and ministers of the word:

3 It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certaintie of those things wherein thou hast beene instructed.

5 ¶ THere was in the dayes of Herod the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord, blamelesse.

7 And they had no childe, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were now well stricken in yeares.

8 And it came to passe that while he executed the priests office before God in the order of his course,

9 According

9 According to the custome of the priests office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the Temple of the Lord.

10 And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incense.

11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.

13 But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias, for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a Son, and thou shalt call his name John.

14 And thou shalt have joy and gladnesse, and many shall rejoyce at his birth.

15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink, and he shall be filled with the holy Ghost, even from his mothers womb.

16 And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.

17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the Fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisedome of the just, to make readie a people prepared for the Lord.

18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? For I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years.

19 And the angel answered and said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou beleevest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the Temple: For he beckened unto them, and remained speechlesse.

23 And it came to passe, assoon as the dayes of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

24 And

24 And after those dayes his wife Elizabeth conceived, and hid her self five moneths, saying;

25 Thus hath the Lord deale with mee in the dayes wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproch among men.

26 And in the sixth moneth the angel Gabriel was sent from God, unto a citie of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgins name was Mary.

28 And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail *thou that art* highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women.

29 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her minde what manner of salutation this should be.

30 And the angel said unto her, Feare not, Mary: For thou hast found favour with God.

31 And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a Son, & shalt call his name Jesus.

32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest, and the Lord God shall give unto him the Throne of his Father David.

33 And he shall reigne over the house of Jacob for ever, & of his kingdome there shalbe no end.

34 Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

35 And the angel answered and said unto her, The holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall bee born of thee, shall be called the Son of God.

36 And behold, thy cousin Elizabeth, shee hath also conceived a son in her old age, and this is the sixth moneth with her, who was called barren.

37 For with God nothing shall be unpossible.

38 And Mary said, Behold, the handmaid of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word: and the angel departed from her.

39 And Mary arose in those dayes, and went into the hill-countrey with haste into a city of Juda

40 And entred into the house of Zacharias and saluted Elizabeth.

41 And it came to passe that when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her

her womb: and Elizabeth was filled with the holy Ghost.

42 And she spake out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy wombe.

43 And whence is this to mee, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?

44 For loe, assoone as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine eares, the babe leaped in my wombe for joy.

45 And blessed is she that beleeved, for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.

46 And Mary said, My soul doth magnifie the Lord:

47 And my spirit hath rejoyced in God my Saviour.

48 For he hath regarded the low estate of his hand-maiden: For behold, from hence-forth all generations shall call me blessed.

49 For he that is mighty hath done to mee great things, and holy is his Name.

50 And his mercy is on them that fear him, from generation to generation.

51 He hath shewed strength with his arme, he hath scattered the proud, in the imagination of their hearts.

52 He hath put downe the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree.

53 Hee hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath sent empty away.

54 He hath holpen his servant Israel, in remembrance of his mercy,

55 As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham and to his seed for ever.

56 And Mary abode with her about three moneths, and returned to her owne house.

57 Now Elizabeths full time came, that shee should be delivered, and she brought forth a son.

58 And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her, and they rejoyced with her.

59 And it came to passe that on the eight day they came to circumcise the childe, and they called him Zacharias after the name of his father.

60 And his mother answered and said, Not so: but he shall be called John.

61 And

62 And they saide unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name.

63 And they made signes to his Father, how he would have him called.

63 And he asked for a writting table, and wrote, saying, His name is Johan: and they marvelled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.

65 And fear came on all that dwelt round about them, and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout the whole countrey of Judea.

66 And all they that had heard them, laid them up in their hearts, saying, What maner of childe shal this be? & the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And his Father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying.

68 Blessed bee the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his people,

69 And hath raised up an horne of Salvation for us, in the house of his servant David;

70 As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began.

71 That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us.

72 To performe the mercie promised to our Fathers, and to remember his holy covenant.

73 The oath which hee sware to our Father Abraham,

74 That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, might serve him without fear,

75 In holinesse and righteousnesse before him all the dayes of our life.

76 And thou childe shalt be called the Prophet of the Highest: For thou shalt go before the face of the Lord, to prepare his wayes;

77 To give knowledge of Salvation unto his people, by the remission of their sins.

78 Through the tender mercy of our God whereby the day-spring from on high hath visited us.

79 To give light to them that sit in darknesse, and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

80 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel,

CHAP.

*Augustus taxeth all the Romane empire, 6 The nativity of Christ. 21 His circumcision.*

AND it came to passe in those dayes, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed.

2 (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governour of Syria.)

3 And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city.

4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, (because he was of the house and linage of David:)

5 To bee taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with childe.

6 And so it was, that while they were there, the dayes were accomplished that she should be delivered.

7 And she brought forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inne.

8 And there were in the same countrey shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.

9 And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them, and they were sore afraid.

10 And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which shall be to all people.

11 For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

12 And this shall be a signe unto you, Ye shall finde the babe wrapped in swadling clothes lying in a manger.

13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, & saying,

14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will towards men.

15 And it came to passe, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to passe, which the Lord hath made known unto us.

16 And they came with haste, and found Mary

and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.

17 And when they had seen it, they made knowne abroad the saying which was told them concerning this childe.

18 And all they that heard it, wondred at those things which were told them by the shepherds.

19 But Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her heart.

20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.

21 And when eight dayes were accomplished for the circumcising of the childe, his name was called JESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

22 And when the dayes of her purification according to the law of Moses, were accomplished they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord,

23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord)

24 And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A paire of turtle-doves, or two young pigeons.

25 And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon. and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the holy Ghost was upon him.

26 And it was revealed unto him by the holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lords Christ.

27 And he came by the spirit into the temple, and when the parents brought in the childe Jesus to do for him after the custome of the law,

28 Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said,

29 Lord now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word.

30 For mine eyes have seen thy salvation:

31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people.

32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

33 And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him.

34 And

34 And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this childe is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel: and for a signe which shall be spoken against:

35 (Yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.

36 And there was one Anna a prophetesse, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser; she was of a great age and had lived with an husband seven years from her virginity.

37 And shee was a widow of about fourscore and foure yeares, which departed not from the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day.

38 And she coming in that instant, gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.

40 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisedome: and the grace of God was upon him.

41 Now his parents went to Jerusalem every yeare at the feast of the passeover.

42 And when he was twelve year old, they went up to Jerusalem, after the custome of the feast.

43 And when they had fulfilled ỹ dayes, as they returned, ỹ childe Jesus tarried behinde in Jerusalem, and Joseph and his mother knew not of it.

44 But they supposing him to have been in the company, went a dayes journey, and they sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to passe, that after three dayes they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctours, both hearing them, and asking them questions.

47 And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers.

48 And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing.

49 And he said unto them, How is it that yee sought me? Wist ye not that I must bee about my Fathers businesse?

50 And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

52 And Jesus increased in wisedome and stature, and in favour with God and man.

## CHAP. III.

*1 Iohn preaching. 15 His testimony of Christ.*

NOw in the fifteenth yeare of the reigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being governour of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene.

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto Iohn the son of Zacharias in the wildernesse.

3 And hee came into all the countrey about Jordan, preaching the baptisme of repentance, for the remission of sins,

4 As it is written in the booke of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying. The voice of one crying in the wildernesse, Prepare yee the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

5 Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low, and the crooked shall bee made straight, and the rough wayes shall be made smooth.

6 And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

7 Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within your selves We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

9 And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen down, and cast into the fire.

10 And

10 And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then?

11 He answereth and saith unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

12 Then came also publicanes to be baptized, and said unto him, Master what shall we do?

13 And he said unto them, Exact no more then that which is appointed you.

14 And the souldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall wee do? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsly, and be content with your wages.

15 And as the people were in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ or not:

16 John answered, saying unto them all, I indeed baptize you with water, but one mightier then I cometh the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose; he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire:

17 Whose fane is in his hand, and hee will throughly purge his floore, and will gather the wheat into his garner, but the chaff hee will burn with fire unquenchable.

18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people.

19 But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him for Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done,

20 Added yet this above all, that hee shut up John in prison.

21 Now when all the people were baptized, it came to passe that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened:

22 And the holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved son, in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was *the son* of Heli,

24 Which was *the son* of Matthat which was *the son* of Levi, which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Janna, which was *the son* of Joseph,

25 Which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was

the son of Amos, which was the son of Nahum, which was the son of Esli, which was the son of Naggè,

26 Which was the son of Maath, which was the son of Mattathias, which was the son of Semei, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Juda.

27 Which was the son of Joanna, which was the son of Rhesa, which was the son of Zorobabel, which was the son of Salathiel, which was the son of Neri,

28 Which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Addi, which was the son of Cosam, which was the son of Elmodam, which was the son of Er.

29 Which was the son of Jose, which was the son of Eliezer, which was the son of Jorim, which was the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi,

30 Which was the son of Simeon, which was the son of Juda, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Jonan, which was the son of Eliakim,

31 Which was the son of Melea, which was the son of Menan, which was the son of Mattatha, which was the son of Nathan which was the son of David,

32 Which was the son of Jesse, which was the son of Obed, which was the son of Booz, which was the son of Salmon, which was the son of Naasson,

33 Which was the son of Aminadab, which was the son of Aram, which was the son of Esrom, which was the son of Phares, which was the son of Juda,

34 Which was the son of Jacob, which was the son of Isaac, which was the son of Abraham, which was the son of Thara, which was the son of Nachor,

35 Which was the son of Saruch, which was the son of Ragau, which was the son of Phalec, which was the son of Heber, which was the son of Sala,

36 Which was the son of Cainan, which was the son of Arphaxad, which was the son of Sem, which was the son of Noe, which was the son of Lamech,

37 Which was the son of Mathusala, which was the son of Enoch, which was the son of Jared, which was the son of Maleleel, which was the son of Cainan.

38 Which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the son of God.

CHAP

1 *Christ's temptation and fasting* 13 *He overcometh the devil:* 14 *beginneth to preach.*

AND Jesus being full of the holy Ghost, returned from Jordan, and was led by the spirit into the wildernesse.

2 Being fourty dayes tempted of the devil. And in those dayes he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungred.

3 And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread.

4 And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.

5 And the devil taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdomes of the world in a moment of time.

6 And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me, and to whomsoever I will, I give it,

7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine.

8 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

9 And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thy self down from hence,

10 For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee,

11 And in their hands they shall bear thee up lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone

12 And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

13 And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

14 ¶ And Jesus returned in the power of the spirit into Galilee, and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.

15 And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

16 ¶ And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and as his custome was, he went

Into the ſynagogue on the ſabbath-day, and ſtood up for to read.

17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Eſaias. & when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

18 The ſpirit of the Lord is upon me, becauſe he hath anointed mee to preach the goſpel to the poore, he hath ſent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of ſight to the blinde, to ſet at liberty them that are bruiſed,

19 To preach the acceptable yeer of the Lord.

20 And hee cloſed the book, and he gave it again to the miniſter, and ſat down: and the eyes of all them that were in the ſynagogue were faſtened on him.

21 And hee began to ſay unto them, This day is this ſcripture fulfilled in your ears.

22 And all bare him witneſſe, and wondred at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they ſaid, Is not this Joſephs ſon?

23 And hee ſaid unto them, Ye will ſurely ſay unto mee this proverb, Phyſician, heal thy ſelf: whatſoever wee have heard done in Capernaum, do alſo here in thy country.

24 And he ſaid, Verily I ſay unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country.

25 But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Iſrael in the dayes of Elias, when the heaven was ſhut up three yeers and ſix moneths, when great famine was throughout all the land:

26 But unto none of them was Elias ſent, ſave unto Sarepta a city of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow.

27 And many lepers were in Iſrael in the time of Elizeus the prophet: and none of them was cleanſed, ſaving Naaman the Syrian.

28 And all they in the ſynagogue, when they heard theſe things, were filled with wrath,

29 And roſe up, and thruſt him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill (whereon their city was built) that they might caſt him down head-long.

30 But hee paſſing through the midſt of them went his way:

31 And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee,

Iilee, and taught them on the sabbath-dayes.

32 And they were astonished at his doctrine: for his word was with power.

33 ¶ And in the synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and cried out with a loud voice,

34 Saying, Let us alone, what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God.

35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him in the mids, he came out of him and hurt him not.

36 And they were all amazed, and spake among themselves, saying, What a word is this? for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out.

37 And the fame of him went out into everie place of the countrey round about.

38 ¶ And he arose out of the synagogue, and entred into Simons house: and Simons wives mother was taken with a great fever, and they besought him for her.

39 And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever, and it left her. And immediatly she arose and ministred unto them.

40 ¶ Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with diverse diseases, brought them unto him: and hee laid his hands on everie one of them, and healed them.

41 And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And hee rebuking them, suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ.

42 And when it was day, hee departed and went into a desert place, and the people sought him, and came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them.

43 And hee said unto them, I must preach the kingdome of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.

44 And hee preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

## CHAP. V.

*Christ preacheth out of the ship. A miraculous draught of fishes.*

AND it came to passe, that as the people preased upon him to heare the word of God, he stood by the lake of Genezareth.

2 And saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fisher-men were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

3 And hee entred into one of the ships which was Simons and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land: and he sate downe and taught the people out of the ship.

4 Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let downe your nets for a draught.

5 And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let downe the net.

6 And when they had this done, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes: and their net brake.

7 And they beckened unto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and helpe them. And they came and filled both the ships: so that they began to sinke.

8 When Simon Peter saw it, hee fell down at Jesus knees, saying, Depart from mee, for I am a sinfull man, O Lord.

9 For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes, which they had taken:

10 And so was also James and John the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not, from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought their ship to land, they forsooke all, and followed him.

12 ¶ And it came to passe, when hee was in a certain citie, behold, a man full of leprosie: who seeing Jesus, fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make mee cleane.

13 And he put forth his hand: and touched him, saying, I will, bee thou cleane: and immediatly the leprosie departed from him.

14 And

14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go, and shew thy self to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him & great multitudes came together to hear and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 ¶ And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.

17 And it came to passe on a certain day as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees, and doctours of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heal them.

18 ¶ And behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with a palsie: and they sought means to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

19 And when they could not finde by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went upon the house top, and let him down through the tiling with his couch, into the midst before Jesus.

20 And when he saw their faith, he said unto him, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.

21 And the Scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God alone?

22 But when Jesus perceived their thoughts, he answering said unto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, rise up and walk?

24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins (he said unto the sick of the palsie) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go into thine house.

25 And immediatly he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to day.

27 ¶ And after those things he went forth, and saw a publicane named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custome: & he said unto him, follow me.

28 And

28 And he left all, rose up, and followed him.
29 And Levi made him a great feast in his own house: and there was a great company of publicanes, and of others that sat down with them.
30 But their Scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicanes and sinners?
31 And Jesus answering, said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician: but they that are sick.
32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.
33 ¶ And they said unto him, Why do the disciples of John fast often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharisees; but thine eat and drink?
34 And he said unto them, Can yee make the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bride-groom is with them?
35 But the dayes will come, when the bride-groom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.
36 ¶ And hee spake also a parable unto them, No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old: if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was *taken* out of the new, agreeth not with the old.
37 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish.
38 But new wine must be put into new bottles, and both are preserved.
39 No man also having drunk old wine, straightway desireth new; for he saith, the old is better.

## CHAP. VI.

*1 The disciples pluck the ears of corn on the sabbath-day, 13 Christ choseth the twelve.*

AND it came to passe on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn fields: and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing them in their hands.
2 And certain of the Pharisees, said unto them, Why do yee, that which is not lawfull to do on the sabbath-dayes?
3 And Jesus answering them, said, Have ye not read so much as this, what David did; when him-

self

self was an hungred, and they ỹ were with him?

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shew bread, and gave also to them that were with him, which is not lawfull to eat but for the priests alone?

5 And he said unto them, That the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

6 And it came to passe also on another sabbath, that he entred into the synagogue & taught, and there was a man whose right hand was withered.

7 And the Scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath-dayt that they might finde an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man ỹ had the wi-hered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose, and stood forth.

9 Then said Jesus unto them I will ask you one thing, Is it lawfull on the sabbath-dayes to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy it?

10 And looking round about upon them all, he said unto ỹ man, Stretch forth thy hand: & he did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

11 And they were filled with madnesse, and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.

12 And it came to passe in those dayes, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

13 ¶ And when it was day he called unto him his disciples: and of them he chose twelve, whom also he named apostles:

14 Simon (whom hee also named Peter) and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew,

15 Matthew and Thomas, James the son of Alphæus, and Simon called Zelotes,

16 And Judas *the brother* of James, and Judas Iscariot, which also was the traitour.

17 ¶ And he came down with them and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judea and Jerusalem, and from the sea-coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to bee healed of their diseases:

18 And they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed.

19 And

19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: For there went vertue out of him, and healed them all.

20 ¶ And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed bee yee poore: For yours is the kingdome of God.

21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: For ye shall be filled. Blessed are yee that weep now: For yee shall laugh.

22 Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from their company* and shall reproch you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of mans sake.

23 Rejoyce ye in that day, and leap for joy: For behold, your reward is great in heaven: For in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.

24 But wo unto you that are rich: For ye have received your consolation.

25 Wo unto you that are full: For ye shall hunger. Wo unto you that laugh now: For ye shall mourne and weep.

26 Wo unto you, when all men shall speak well of you: For so did their fathers to the false prophets.

27 ¶ But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, doe good to them which hate you.

28 Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you.

29 And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek, offer also the other: and him that taketh away thy cloak, forbid not to take thy coat also.

30 *Give* to every man that asketh of thee: and of him that taketh away thy goods, aske them not againe.

31 And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.

32 For if ye love them which love you, what thank have yee? for sinners also love those that love them.

33 And if yee do good to them which do good to you? what thank have ye? for sinners also doe even the same.

34 And if ye lend to them of whom yee hope to receive, what thanke have ye? For sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much againe.

35 But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend hoping for nothing again: and your reward

shall

shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the highest: For he is kinde unto the unthankfull, and to the evil.

36 Bee yee therefore mercifull, as your Father also is mercifull.

37 Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemne not, and ye shall not be condemned: Forgive, and ye shall be forgiven:

38 Give, and it shall be given unto you: good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosome. For with the same measure that ye mete withall, it shall be measured to you again.

39 And hee spake a parable unto them, Can the blinde lead the blinde? shall they not both fall into the ditch?

40 The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect, shall be as his master.

41 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine owne eye?

42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thy selfe beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

43 For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit: neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

44 For every tree is known by his own fruit: For of thornes men doe not gather figs, nor of a bramble-bush gather they grapes.

45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good: and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: For of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

46 ¶ And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

47 Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doth them, I will shew you to whom he is like:

48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, & laid the foundation on a rock: and when

when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock.

49 But he that heareth, and doth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediatly it fell, and the ruine of that house was great.

## CHAP. VII.

1 *The centurions faith.* 10 *Christ healeth his servant being absent.* 11 *and raiseth the widows son.*

NOw when hee had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, hee entred into Capernaum.

2 And a certain centurions servant, who was dear unto him, was sick and readie to die.

3 And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that hee would come and heal his servant.

4 And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, that hee was worthy for whom he should do this.

5 For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue.

6 Then Jesus went with them. And when hee was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thy self, for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my roof.

7 Wherefore neither thought I my self worthy to come unto thee: but, say in a word, and my servant shall be healed.

8 For I also am a man set under authority, having under me souldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doth it.

9 When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.

11 ¶ And it came to passe the day after, that he went into a city called Naim; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city,

city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, hee had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not.

14 And hee came and touched the biere. (and they that bare him stood still) and he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise.

15 And he that was dead, sat up, and began to speak: and he delivered him to his mother.

16 And there came a fear on all, and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us, and ℣ God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 And the disciples of Iohn shewed him of all these things.

19 ¶ And Iohn calling unto him two of his disciples, sent them unto Iesus saying, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another?

20 When the men were come unto him, they said, Iohn Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he ℣ should come, or look we for another?

21 And in that same houre he cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits, and unto many that were blinde he gave sight.

22 Then Iesus answering, said unto them, Go your way, and tell Iohn what things ye have seen and heard, how that ℣ blinde see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poore the gospel is preached.

23 And blessed is hee whosoever shall not bee offended in me.

24 ¶ And when the messengers of Iohn were departed, hee began to speak unto the people concerning Iohn, What went yee out into the wildernesse for to see? A reed shaken with the winde?

25 But what went yee out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live dilicatly, are in kings courts.

26 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, & much more then a prophet.

27 This is hee of whom it is written, Behold, I send

send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say unto you, Among those that are borne of women, there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdome of God, is greater than he.

29 And all the people that heard *him*, and the publicanes justified God, being baptized with the baptisme of John.

30 But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like?

32 They are like unto children sitting in the market-place, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.

33 For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine, and ye say, He hath a devil.

34 The Son of man is come eating and drinking, and ye say, Behold, a glouttonous man, and a winebibber, a friend of publicanes and sinners.

35 But wisedome is justified of all her children.

36 ¶ And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisees house, and sat down to meat.

37 And behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisees house, brought an alabaster box of ointment,

38 And stood at his feet behinde him weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the haires of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment.

39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who, and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on.

41 There

41 There was a certain creditor, which had two debters: the one ought five hundred pence, and the other fifty.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most?

43 Simon answered and said, I suppose that he to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, thou hast rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the haires of her head.

45 Thou gavest me no kisse: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kisse my feet.

46 Mine head with oyl thou didst not anoint, but this woman hath anointed my feet with oyntment.

47 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven, for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.

48 And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven.

49 And they that sate at meat with him began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also?

50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee, go in peace.

## CHAP. VIII.

1 *The parable of the sower.* 16 *The legion of devils*

AND it came to passe afterward, that he went throughout every city and village preaching and shewing the glad tydings of the Kingdome of God: and the twelve *were* with him.

2 And certain women which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils.

3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herods steward, and Susanna, and many others which ministred unto him of their substance.

4 ¶ And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable:

5 A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed

sowed, some fell by the wayes side, and it was troden down, and the fowls of the aire devoured it.

6 And some fell upon a rock, and assoon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it.

8 And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundred fold. And when he had said these things, he cried, He that hath eares to hear, let him hear.

9 And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable be?

10 And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdome of God: but to others in parables; that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not understand.

11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God.

12 Those by the way side, are they that heare; then cometh the devil and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved.

13 They on the rock, are they, which when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among thorns are they, which when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares and riches, and pleasures of this life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground, are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, & bring forth fruit with patience.

16 ¶ No man when hee hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed: but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light.

17 For nothing is secret, that shall not bee made manifest: neither any thing hid, that shall not be known and come abroad.

18 Take heed therefore how ye heare: for whosoever hath, to him shall bee given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have.

19 ¶ Then came to him his mother and his brethren,

brethren, and could not come at him for the preasse.

20 And it was told him *by certain*, which said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.

21 And hee answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it.

22 ¶ Now it came to passe on a certain day, that he went into a ship with his disciples: and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake: and they launched forth.

23 But as they sailed, he fell asleep: and there came down a storm of wind on the lake, and they were filled *with water*, and were in jeopardy.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he arose, and rebuked the winde, and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm.

25 And he said unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid, wondred, saying one to another, What manner of man is this? for hee commandeth even the windes and water, and they obey him.

26 ¶ And they arrived at the countrey of the Gadarenes, which is over against Galilee.

27 And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city, a certain man which had devils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in any house, but in the tombs.

28 When he saw Jesus, hee cried out, and fell down before him, & with a loud voice said, What have I to doe with thee, Jesus, thou son of God most high? I beseech thee torment me not.

29 (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him, and he was kept bound with chains, and in fetters, and hee brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wildernesse.)

30 And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him that hee would not command them to go out into the deep.

32 And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him that

that he would suffer them to enter into them? and he suffered them.

33 Then went the devils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked.

34 When they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the city and in the countrey.

35 Then they went out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw it, told them by what meanes he that was possessed of the devils was healed.

37 ¶ Then the whole multitude of the countrey of the Gadarens round about, besought him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ship, and returned back again.

38 Now the man out of whom the devils were departed, besought him that he might be with him: but Jesus sent him away, saying,

39 Return to thine owne house, and shew how great things God hath done unto thee. And he went his way, & published throughout the whole city, how great things Jesus had done unto him.

40 And it came to passe, that when Jesus was returned, the people gladly received him: for they were all waiting for him.

41 ¶ And behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue, and he fell down at Jesus feet, and besought him that he would come into his house:

42 For he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a dying. (But as he went, the peole thronged him.

43 ¶ And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither could be healed of any.

44 Came behinde him, and touched the borde of his garment: and immediatly her issue of blood stanched.

45 And Jesus said, who touched me? When all denied, Peter, and they that were with him, said

Master

saster, the multitude throng thee, and preasse thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

46 And Jesus said, Some body hath touched me: for I perceive that vertue is gone out of me.

47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediatly.

48 And he said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole, go in peace.

49 ¶ While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogues *house*, saying to him, thy daughter is dead, trouble not the Master.

50 But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Feare not, believe only, and she shall be made whole.

51 And when he came into the house, he suffred no man to go in, save Peter, and James and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

52 And all wept and bewailed her: but he said Wept not, she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to scorne, knowing that she was dead.

54 And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, maid, arise.

55 And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat.

56 And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

## CHAP IX.

*Christ sendeth forth his apostles. 9 Herod desired to see Christ. 28 Christs transfiguration.*

THen he called his twelve disciples together and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases.

2 And he sent them to preach the kingdome of God, and to heal the sick.

3 And he said unto them, take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money neither have two coats a piece.

4 And whatsoever house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And whosoever will not receive you when ye

go out of that city, shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimony against them.

6 And they departed, & went through the towns, preaching the gospel, and healing every where.

7 ¶ Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all ỹ was done by him: & he was perplexed, because that it was said of some ỹ John was risen from the dead;

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of others, ỹ one of the old prophets was risen again.

9 And Herod said, John have I beheaded: but who is this of whom I heare such things? And he desired to see him.

10 ¶ And the apostles when they were returned, told him all that they had done. And hee took them, and went aside privately into a desert place, belonging to the city called Bethsaida.

11 And the people when they knew it, followed him, and hee received them, and spake unto them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

12 And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into ỹ towns and countrey round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place.

13 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more but five loaves and two fishes, except wee should go and buy meat for all this people.

14 For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company.

15 And they did so, and made them all sit down.

16 Then hee took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.

17 And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken up of fragments that remained to them twelve baskets.

18 ¶ And it came to passe as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and hee asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?

19 They answering, said, John the Baptist: but some say Elias: and others say, that one of the old prophets is risen again.

20 He

20 He said unto them, But whom say yee that I am? Peter answering, said, The Christ of God.

21 And he straitly charged them and commanded them to tell no man that thing;

22 Saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, and bee rejected of the elders and chief priests and Scribes, and be slaine, and bee raised the third day.

23 ¶ And he said to them all, If any man will come after mee, let him denie himself, and take up his crosse daily, and follow me.

24 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.

25 For what is a man advantaged, if hee gain the whole world, & lose himself, or be cast away?

26 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, of him shall the Son of man bee ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory and in his Father's, and of the holy angels.

27 But I tell you of a truth, there bee some standing here which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdome of God.

28 And it came to passe, about an eight dayes after these sayings, hee took Peter, and John, and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

29 And as hee prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glistering.

30 And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias.

31 Who appeared in glorie, and spake of his decease, which hee should accomplish at Jerusalem.

32 But Peter and they that were with him, were heavie with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three Tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.

34 While hee thus spake, there came a cloud, and over-shadowed them, and they feared as they entred into the cloud.

35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, say-

ing, This is my beloved Son, Heare him.

36 And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone: and they kept it close, and told no man in those dayes any of those things which they had seen.

37 ¶ And it came to passe, that on the next day, when they were come downe from the hill, much people met him.

38 And behold, a man of the company cryed out, saying, Master, I beseech thee looke upon my son, for hee is mine only childe.

39 And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly cryeth out & it teareth him, that he foameth again, and bruiseing him, hardly departeth from him.

40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out, and they could not.

41 And Jesus answering, said, O faithlesse and perverse generation, how long shall I bee with you? and suffer you? Bring thy son hither.

42 And as he was yet a coming, the devil threw him down, and tare him: and Jesus rebuked the uncleane spirit, and healed the childe, and delivered him again to his father.

43 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God: but while they wondred every one at all things which Jesus did, hee said unto his disciples,

44 Let these things sinke down into your ears: For the Son of man shall bee delivered into the hands of men.

45 But they understood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not: and they feared to aske him of that saying.

46 ¶ Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest.

47 And Jesus perceiving the thought of their heart, tooke a childe, and set him by him,

48 And said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this childe in my Name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive mee, receiveth him that sent mee: for hee that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

49 ¶ And John answered and said, Master, wee saw one casting out devils in thy Name and wee forbad him, because he followed not with us.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not,

for

for hee that is not against us, is for us.

51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the time was come that hee should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to goe to Jerusalem,

52 And sent messengers before his face, and they went, and entred into a village of the Samaritanes to make readie for him.

53 And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would goe to Jerusalem.

54 And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come downe from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did?

55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Yee know not what manner of spirit yee are of.

56 For the Son of man is not come to destroy mens lives, but to save them. And they went to another village.

57 ¶ And it came to passe that as they went in the way, a certaine man said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

58 And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the aire have nests, but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

59 And he said unto another, Follow mee: but hee said, Lord, suffer mee first to goe and bury my father.

60 Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead; but go thou, & preach the kingdome of God.

61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee: but let mee first goe bid them farewell which are at home at my house.

62 And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking backe, is fit for the kingdome of God.

## CHAP. X.

*1 The seventy disciples, 17 admonished to behaviour. 41 Martha reprehended, & Mary commended.*

AFter these things, the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every citie, and place, whither he himself would come.

2 Therefore said hee unto them, The harvest truly is great but the labourers are few: pray yee therefore the Lord of the harvest, that hee would send forth labourers into his harvest.

3 Go your wayes: behold, I send you forth as lambes among wolves.

4 Carry neither purse nor scrip, nor shoes, and salute no man by the way.

5 And into whatsoever house yee enter, first say, Peace be to this house.

6 And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again.

7 And in the same house remaine, eating and drinking such things as they give: For the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.

8 And into whatsoever city yee enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you.

9 And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, the kingdome of God is come nigh unto you.

10 But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, goe your wayes out into the streets of the same, and say,

11 Even the very dust of your citie which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdome of God is come nigh unto you.

12 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, then for that city.

13 Woe unto thee Chorazin, woe unto thee Bethsaida: For if the mighty workes had beene done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgement, then for you.

15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell.

16 Hee that heareth you, heareth mee: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

17 ¶ And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy Name.

18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning, fall from heaven.

19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents, & scorpions, & over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

20 Notwithstanding in this rejoyce not, that the spirits are subject unto you: but rather rejoyce because

because your names are written in heaven.

21 ¶ In that houre Jesus rejoyced in spirit, and said I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from ỹ wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

22 All things are delivered to mee of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is but the Father: and who the Father is, but the Son and he to whom the Son will reveal him.

23 ¶ And hee turned him unto his disciples, and said privately. Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see.

24 For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which yee see, and have not seene them: and to heare those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

25 ¶ And behold, a certaine Lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherite eternall life?

26 Hee said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou?

27 And he answering, said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy minde: and thy neighbour as thy self.

28 And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: This do, and thou shalt live.

29 But he willing to justifie himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?

30 And Jesus answering, said, A certaine man went downe from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among theeves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, and leaving him half dead.

31 And by chance there came downe a certaine priest that way, and when hee saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certaine Samaritane, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, hee had compassion on him.

34 And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oyle and wine, and set him on his own

heard, and brought him to an Inne, and took care of him

35 And on the morrow when he departed, hee tooke out two pence, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him, and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again I will repay thee.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou was neighbour unto him that fell among the theeves?

37 And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Goe, and doe thou likewise.

38 ¶ Now it came to passe, as they went, that he entred into a certaine village: and a certaine woman named Martha, received him into her house.

39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also sate at Jesus feet, and heard his word.

40 But Martha was cumbred about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left mee to serve alone? bid her therefore that she helpe me.

41 And Jesus answered and said unto her Martha, Martha, thou art carefull, and troubled about many things:

42 But one thing is needfull, and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

## CHAP. XI.

*2 Christ teacheth to pray instantly. 14 He casteth out a dumbe devil.*

AND it came to passe, that as hee was praying in a certaine place, when hee ceased, one of his disciples said unto him. Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.

2 And he saith unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy Name. Thy kingdome come. Thy will bee done as in heaven, so in earth.

3 Give us day by day our daily bread

4 And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.

5 And hee said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves;

6 For a friend of mine in his journey is come

to mee, and I have nothing to set before him?

7 And hee from within shall answer and say, Trouble mee not, the doore is now shut, and my children are with mee in bed: I cannot rise and give thee:

8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise, and give him, because he is his friend: yet because of his importunity, he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

9 And I say unto you. Aske, and it shall be given you: seeke and ye shall finde: knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

10 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

11 If a son shall aske bread of any of you that is a father, will hee give him a stone? or if he aske a fish will he for a fish give him a serpent?

12 Or if he shall aske an egg, will he offer him a scorpion?

13 If yee then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the holy Spirit to them that aske him.

14 ¶ And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumbe. And it came to passe when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake, and the people wondred.

15 But some of them said, He casteth out devils through Beelzebub, the chiefe of the devils.

16 And other tempting him, sought of him a signe from heaven.

17 But hee knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdome divided against it self is brought to desolation: and a house *divided* against a house, falleth.

18 If satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdome stand? because yee say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.

19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom doe your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges.

20 But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdome of God is come upon you.

21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace.

22 But when a stronger then he shall come upon him, & overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, & divideth his spoil.

23 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

24 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places seeking rest: and finding none, hee saith, I will returne unto my house whence I came out.

25 And when he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth hee, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked then himselfe, and they enter in, and dwell there, and the last state of that man is worse then the first.

27 ¶ And it came to passe, as hee spake these things a certain woman of the company lift up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the wombe that bare thee, & the papes which thou hast sucked.

28 But hee said, Yea rather blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

29 ¶ And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say, This is an evil generation, they seek a signe and there shall no signe be given it but the signe of Jonas the prophet.

30 For as Jonas was a signe unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.

31 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with the men of this generation, and condemne them: for shee came from the utmost parts of the earth, to hear the wisedome of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

32 The men of Nineve shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: For they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and behold a greater then Jonas is here.

33 No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candle sticke, that they which come in may see the light.

34 The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light: but when *thine eye* is evil, thy body also is full of darkenesse.

35 Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee be not darkenesse.

36 If thy whole body therefore bee full, hauing no part darke, the whole shall bee full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth giue thee light.

37 ¶ And as he spake, a certaine Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in and sate down to meat.

38 And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner.

39 And the Lord said unto him, Now doe yee Pharisees make cleane the outside of the cup and the platter: but your inward part is full of raueining and wickednesse.

40 Ye fools did not he that made that which is without make that which is within also?

41 But rather giue almes of such things as you haue: and behold, all things are cleane unto you.

42 But wo unto you Pharisees: For ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, and passe ouer judgement and the loue of God: these ought yee to haue done, and not to leaue the other undone.

43 Wo unto you Pharisees: For ye loue the uppermost seats in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets.

44 Wo unto you Scribes & Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye are as graues which appear not, and the men that walke ouer them, are not aware of them.

45 ¶ Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him, Master, thus saying, thou reprochest us also.

46 And he said, Wo unto you also ye lawyers! For yee lade men with burdens grieuous to bee borne, and ye your selues touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

47 Wo unto you: For ye build the Sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them.

48 Truly yee beare witnesse that yee allow the deeds of your fathers: For they indeed killed them, and ye build their Sepulchres.

49 Therefore also said the wisedome of God, I will send them prophets and apostles and *some* of them they shall slay and persecute:

50 That the bloud of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation.

51 From the bloud of Abel unto the bloud of

Zacharias, which perished betweene the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, it shall bee required of this generation.

52 Woe unto you lawyers: For yee have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entred not in your selves, & them that were entring in, yee hindred.

53 And as hee said these things unto them, the Scribes & the Pharisees began to urge him vehemently, & to provoke him to speak of many things:

54 Laying wait for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

## CHAP. XII.

*To avoid hypocrisie and fearfulnesse in publishing Christs doctrine.*

IN the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisie.

2 For there is nothing covered that shall not be revealed: neither hid, that shall not be knowne.

3 Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darknesse, shall bee heard in the light: and that which yee have spoken in the eare in closets, shall bee proclaimed upon the house tops.

4 And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the bodie, and after that, have no more that they can doe.

5 But I will forewarn you whom you shall fear: Fear him which after hee hath killed, hath power to cast into hell, yea, I say unto you, Fear him.

6 Are not five sparrowes sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God?

7 But even the very haires of your head are all numbred. Fear not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparrows.

8 Also I say unto you, whosoever shall confesse me before men, him shall the Son of man also confesse before the angels of God.

9 But he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God.

10 And whosoever shall speake a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven.

11 And

11 And when they bring you unto the Synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say:

12 For the holy Ghost shall teach you in the same houre what ye ought to say.

13 ¶ And one of the company said unto him, Master, speake to my brother, that hee divide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said unto him, Man, who made mee a judge or a divider over you?

15 And hee said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousnesse: For a mans life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certaine rich man brought forth plentifully.

17 And hee thought within himselfe, saying What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

18 And hee said, This will I doe, I will pull down my barns and build greater, and there will I bestow all my fruits, and my goods.

19 And I will say to my soule, Soule, thou hast much goods laid up for many yeares, take thine ease, eate, drinke, and be merry.

20 But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shal those things be which thou hast provided?

21 So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich towards God.

22 ¶ And he said unto his disciples Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life what ye shal eat, neither for ỹ body what ye shal put on

23 The life is more then meat, and the body is more then rayment.

24 Consider the ravens, for they neither sow nor reap which neither have store-house nor barn, and God feedeth them. How much more are yee better then the fowls?

25 And which of you with taking thought can adde to his stature one cubit?

26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take yee thought for the rest?

27 Consider the lilies how they grow, they toil

not,

not, they spin not: and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory was not arayed like one of these.

28 If then God so clothe the grasse, which is to day in the field, and to morrow is cast into the oven: how much more will he clothe you, O yee of little Faith?

29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat or what ye shall drinke, neither be ye of doubtfull minde.

30 For all these things do the nations of the world seeke after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things.

31 ¶ But rather seek ye the kingdome of God, and all these things shall bee added unto you.

32 Fear not, little flocke: For it is your Fathers good pleasure to give you the kingdome.

33 Sell that ye have, and give almes: provide your selves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not: where no thiefe approcheth, neither moth corrupteth.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35 Let your loyns be girded about, and your lights burning.

36 And yee your selves like unto men that waite for their Lord, when he will returne from the wedding: that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediatly.

37 Blessed are those servants whom the Lord when he cometh shall finde watching: Verily, I say unto you, that hee shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.

38 And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and finde them so, blessed are those servants.

39 And this know that if the good-man of the house had known what houre the thiefe would come, he would have watched and not have suffered his house to be broken through.

40 Be ye therefore ready also: For the Son of man cometh at an houre when ye thinke not.

41 ¶ Then Peter said unto him, Lord speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all?

42 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithfull and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler

ruler over his houshold, to give them their portion of meat in due season?

43 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh, shall finde so doing.

44 Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that hee hath

45 But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming, and shall begin to beat the men-servants and maidens, and to eate and drinke, and to be drunken:

46 The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, & at an houre when he is not ware, and will cut him in sunder, & will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

47 And that servant which knew his lords will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

48 But hee that knew not, and did commit things worthie of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: & to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

49 ¶ I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I if it be already kindled?

50 But I have a baptisme to be baptized with, and how am I straitned till it be accomplished.

51 Suppose yee that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay: but rather division.

52 For from hence forth there shall bee five in one house divided, three against two and two against three.

53 The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father: the mother against the daughter & the daughter against the mother: the mother in law against her daughter in law, & the daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 ¶ And hee said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a showre, and so it is.

55 And when ye see the south winde blow yee say, There will be heat: and it cometh to passe.

56 Ye hypocrites, yee can discerne the face of the skie and of the earth: but how is it, that ye do not discerne this time?

57 Yea, and why even of your selves judge ye not what is right?

58 ¶ When

58 ¶ When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, as thou art in the way, give diligence, that thou mayest be delivered from him, lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, & the officer cast thee into prison.

59 I tell thee, Thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast payed the very last mite.

## CHAP. XIII.

1 *Christ preacheth repentance upon the punishment of the Galileans, and others.*

THere were present at that season, some that told him of the Galileans, whose bloud Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you, Nay: but except yee repent, yee shall all likewise perish.

4 Or those eighteen, upon whom the towre in Siloam fell, and slew them, think yee that they were sinners, above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem?

5 I tell you, Nay: but except yee repent, yee shall all likewise perish.

6 ¶ He spake also this parable: A certaine man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard, and hee came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and finde none: cut it downe, why cumbreth it the ground?

8 And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, & dung it:

9 And if it bear fruit well: and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it downe.

10 And hee was teaching in one of the Synagogues on the Sabbath.

11 ¶ And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up her self.

12 And when Jesus saw her, hee called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmitie.

13 And he laid his hands on her, and immediatly she was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the

Sabbath

Sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There are six dayes in which men ought to worke: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath-day.

15 The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the Sabbath-day loose his ox or his asse from the stall, and lead him away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, loe, these eighteene yeares, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath-day?

17 And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoyced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18 ¶ Then said he, Unto what is the kingdome of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?

19 It is like a graine of mustard seed, which a man took and cast into his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree: and the fowls of the aire lodged in the branches of it.

20 And again he said Whereunto shall I liken the kingdome of God?

21 It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

22 And he went through the cities and villages, teaching and journeying towards Jerusalem.

23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them,

24 ¶ Strive to enter in at the strait gate: For many, I say unto you will seeke to enter in, and shall not be able.

25 When once the Master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the doore, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the doore saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us: and he shall answere and say unto you, I know you not whence you are:

26 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.

27 But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence you are, depart from me all yee workers of iniquitie.

28 There shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth, when

then ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdome of God, and you *your selves* thrust out.

29 And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdome of God.

30 And behold, there are last, which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

31 ¶ The same day there came certaine of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: For Herod will kill thee.

32 And he said unto them, Go ye and tell that Fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I doe cures to day, and to morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

33 Nevertheless I must walke to day, and to morrow, and the day following: For it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

34 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not?

35 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: And verily I say unto you, ye shall not see me, untill the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

## CHAP. XIIII.

a *The dropsie healed on the Sabbath:* 15 *The parable of the great supper.*

AND it came to passe, as he went into the house of one of the chiefe Pharisees to eat bread on the Sabbath day, that they watched him.

2 And behold, there was a certaine man before him which had the dropsie.

3 And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawfull to heal on the Sabbath-day?

4 And they held their peace. And he took him and healed him, and let him goe:

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an asse or an ox fallen into a pit, & will not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day?

6 And they could not answere him againe to these things.

7 ¶ And he put forth a parable to those which were

were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms, saying unto them,

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room, lest a more honourable man then thou be bidden of him:

9 And he that bad thee and him, come and say to thee, Give this man place: and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room.

10 But when thou art bidden, go and sit downe in the lowest room, that when hee that bad thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee.

11 For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased, and he that humbleth himself, shalbe exalted.

12 ¶ Then said hee also to him that bad him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen nor thy rich neighbours, lest they also bid thee again, and a recompence be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, call the poore, the maimed, the lame, the blinde:

14 And thou shalt bee blessed: For they cannot recompence thee: For thou shalt be recompenced at the resurrection of the just.

15 ¶ And when one of them that sate at meat with him: heard these things, hee said unto him, Blessed is hee that shall eat bread in the kingdome of God.

16 Then said he unto him, A certaine man made a great supper, and bad many:

17 And sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready.

18 And they all with one consent began to make excuse: The first said unto him I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs goe and see it: I pray thee have me excused.

19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and goe to prove them: I pray thee have mee excused.

20 And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.

21 So that servant came, & shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry, said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and

and lanes of the city, & bring in hither the poor and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde.

22 And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.

23 And the Lord said unto the servant, Go out unto the high wayes and hedges, and compell them to come in, that my house may be filled.

24 For I say unto you, That none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

25 ¶ And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them,

26 If any man come to mee, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his owne life also, hee cannot be my disciple.

27 And whosoever doth not beare his crosse, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

28 For which of you intending to build a tower, sitteth not downe first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it?

29 Lest haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it, begin to mocke him,

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish.

31 Or what king going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand, to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand?

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

33 So likewise, whosoever he bee of you, that forsaketh not all that hee hath, hee cannot be my disciple.

34 Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his savour, where-with shall it be seasoned?

35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dung hill, but men cast it out. Hee that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

## CHAP. XV.

1 *The parable of the lost sheep*: 8 *of the piece of silver*: 11 *of the prodigall son.*

THen drew near unto him all the publicanes and sinners for to heare him.

2 And the Pharisees & Scribes murmured, saying This

This man receiveth sinners, & eateth with them.
3 ¶ And he spake this parable unto them, saying.
4 What man of you having an hundred sheep, if he loose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wildernesse, and goe after that which is lost, until he finde it?
5 And when hee hath found it, hee layeth it on his shoulders, rejoycing.
6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoyce with mee, for I have found my sheep which was lost.
7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more then over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.
8 ¶ Either what woman having ten pieces of silver if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently, till she finde it?
9 And when she hath found it, shee calleth her friends and her neighbours together, saying, Rejoyce with me, for I have found the piece which I had lost.
10 Likewise I say unto you, There is joy in the presence of the angels of God, over one sinner that repenteth.
11 ¶ And he said, A certaine man had two sonns:
12 And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give mee the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living.
13 And not many dayes after, the younger son gathered all together and tooke his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living.
14 And when hee had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land, and hee began to be in want.
15 And he went and joyned himselfe to a citizen of that country, and hee sent him into his fields to feed swine.
16 And hee would faine have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.
17 And when he came to himselfe, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough

enough, and to spare, and I perish with hunger.

18 I will arise, and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee,

19 And am no more worthie to bee called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants.

20 And he arose, and came to his Father. But when hewas yet a great way off his Father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his necke, and kissed him.

21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthie to becalled thy son.

22 But the Father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand and shoes on his feet.

23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it, and let us eat and be merry.

24 For this my son was dead, and is alive again: hee was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing.

26 And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.

27 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come and thy Father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.

28 And hee was angry and would not go in: therefore came his Father out, and intreated him.

29 And hee answering, said to his Father, Loe, these many yeares doe I serve thee: neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment, and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:

30 But assoone as this thy son was come which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.

31 And hee said unto him, Son, thou art ever with mee, and all that I have is thine.

32 It was meete that wee should make merry, and be glad: For this thy brother was dead, and is alive againe, and was lost, and is found.

CHAP.

*Of the unjust steward. 14 The hypocrisie of the covetous Pharisees reproved.*

AND hee said also unto his disciples, There was a certain rich man which had a steward, and the same was accused unto him that hee had wasted his goods.

2 And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward said within himself What shall I do? For my lord taketh away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig, to beg I am ashamed.

4 I am resolved what to doe that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.

5 So hee called every one of his lords debters unto him, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord?

6 And hee said, An hundred measures of oyl. And hee said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit downe quickly and write fiftie.

7 Then said he to another. And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred measures of wheate. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourescore.

8 And the Lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: For the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.

9 And I say unto you, Make to your selves friends of the Mammon of unrighteousnes, that when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.

10 He that is faithfull in that which is least, is faithfull also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much.

11 If therefore yee have not beene faithfull in the unrighteous Mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?

12 And if yee have not been faithfull in that which is another mans, who shall give you that which is your owne?

13 No servant can serve two masters: for either hee will hate the one and love the other, or else he will hold to the one and despise the other: ye cannot serve God and Mammon.

14 And the Pharisees also who were covetous, heard

heard all these things: and they derided him.

15 And he said unto them, Ye are they which justifie your selves before men, but God knoweth your hearts: For that which is highly esteemed amongst men, is abomination in the sight of God.

16 The law and the prophets were until John: since that time the kingdome of God is preached, and every man presseth into it.

17 And it is easier for heaven and earth to passe, then one tittle of the law to faile.

18 Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adulterie: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adultery.

19 ¶ There was a certaine rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day.

20 And there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate full of sores,

21 And desiring to bee fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich mans table: moreover, the dogs came, and licked his sores.

22 And it came to passe that the begger died, and was carried by the angels into Abrahams bosome: the rich man also died, and was buried.

23 And in hell he lift up his eyes being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosome.

24 And he cryed, and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on mee, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue, for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy life time receivedst thy good things, and like-wise Lazarus evil things, but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, so that they which would passe from hence to you, cannot, neither can they passe to us, that would come from thence.

27 Then hee said, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house:

28 For I have five brethren, that hee may testifie unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and

and the prophets, let them hear them.

30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they bee perswaded, though one rose from the dead.

## CHAP. XVII.

*1 Christ teacheth to avoid occasions of offence. 3 one to forgive another. 6 The power of faith.*

THen said he unto the disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come, but wo unto him through whom they come.

2 It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, & he cast into the sea, then that hee should offend one of these little ones.

3 ¶ Take heed to your selves: if thy brother trespasse against thee, rebuke him: and if hee repent, forgive him.

4 And if hee trespasse against thee, seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

5 And the Apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our Faith.

6 And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a graine of mustard-seed, ye might say unto this Sycamine tree, Be thou pluched up by the root, and be thou planted in the Sea, and it should obey you.

7 But which of you having a servant plowing, or feeding cattell, will say unto him by and by, when hee is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat?

8 And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thy self, and serve mee, till I have eaten and drunken: and afterward thou shalt eat and drink.

9 Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not.

10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: wee have done that which was our duetie to doe.

11 ¶ And it came to passe, as he went to Jerusalem, that hee passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entred into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off,

13 And

13 And they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus Master, have mercie on us.

14 And when hee saw them, he said unto them, Goe shew your selves unto the priests: And it came to passe, ℣ as they went, they were cleansed.

15 And one of them when he saw ℣ he was healed, turned back & with a loud voice glorified God,

16 And fell down on his face at his feet giving him thanks. and he was a Samaritane.

17 And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine?

18 There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.

19 And hee said unto him, Arise, goe thy way, thy Faith hath made thee whole.

20 ¶ And when hee was demanded of the Phārisees, when the kingdome of God should come: he answered them, and said, The kingdome of God cometh not with observation.

21 Neither shall they say, Lo here, or lo there: For behold the kingdome of God is within you.

22 And hee said unto the disciples, The dayes will come when yee shall desire to see one of the dayes of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 And they shall say to you, See here, or see there: go not after them, nor follow them.

24 For as ℣ lightning that lighteth out of the one part under heaven shineth unto the other part under heaven: so shal also ℣ Son of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many things, and bee rejected of this generation.

26 And as it was in the dayes of Noe, so shall it be also in the dayes of the Son of man.

27 They did eat, they dranke, they married wives, they were given in marriage, untill the day that Noe entred into the arke: and the flood came and destroyed them all.

28 Likewise also as it was in the dayes of Lot, they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded:

29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodome, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all.

30 Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.

31 In that day, he which shall be upon the house

(top)

top and his stuffe in the house, see him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back.

32 Remember Lots wife.

33 Whosoever shall seek to save his life, shall lose it. and whosoever shall lose his life, shall preserve it.

34 I tell you, in that night there shall be two men in one bed, the one shall be taken, the other shall be left.

35 Two women shall be grinding together, the one shall be taken and the other left.

36 Two men shall be in the field, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

37 And they answered and said unto him, Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Wheresoever the body is, thither will the eagles bee gathered together.

## CHAP. XVIII.

*3 The importunate widow. 9 The pharisee and the publicane. 15 Children brought to Christ.*

AND he spake a parable unto them, *to this end*, that men ought alwayes to pray, and not to faint.

2 Saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God: neither regarded man.

3 And there was a widow in the city, and shee came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary.

4 And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man,

5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continuall coming she weary me.

6 And the Lord said, Heare what the unjust judge saith.

7 And shall not God avenge his owne elect, which cry day and night unto him, though hee bear long with them?

8 I tell you that he will avenge them speedily Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he finde faith on the earth?

9 And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others:

10 Two men went up into the temple to pray,

the one a pharisee, and the other a publicane.

11 The pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publicane.

12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possesse.

13 And the publicane standing a far off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be mercifull to me a sinner.

14 I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather then the other: For every one that exalteth himself shall be abased, and he that humbleth himself, shall be exalted.

15 And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

16 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

17 Verily I say unto you. Whosoever shall not receive the kingdome of God as a little childe, shall in no wise enter therein.

18 And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherite eternall life?

19 And Jesus said unto him, Why calleſt thou me good? none is good save one, *that is* God.

20 Thou knowest the commandements. Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal. Do not bear false witnesse, Honour thy father and thy mother.

21 And he said, all these have I kept from my youth up.

22 Now when Jesus heard these things he said, unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poore, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven, & come, follow me.

23 And when he heard this, he was very sorrowfull, for he was very rich.

24 And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowfull, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdome of God.

25 For it is easier for a camel to go through a needles eye then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And

26 And they that heard it, said, Who then can be saved?

27 And he said, The things which are impossible with men, are possible with God.

28 Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee.

29 And hee said unto them, Verily I say unto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children for the kingdome of Gods sake.

30 Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.

31 Then hee took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man, shall be accomplished.

32 For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall bee mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on:

33 And they shall scourge him, and put him to death: and the third day he shall rise again.

34 And they understood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

35 ¶ And it came to passe, that as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blinde man sat by the way side begging.

36 And hearing the multitude passe by, hee asked what it meant.

37 And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.

38 And he cryed saying, Jesus, thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more, Thou Son of David have mercy on me.

40 And Jesus stood and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come near, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall doe unto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight.

42 And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight, thy faith hath saved thee.

43 And immediatly he received his sight, and followed him glorifying God: and all the people when they saw it, gave praise unto God.

## CHAP XIX.

*1 Zacheus a publicane. 11 he ten pieces of money 21 Christ rideth into Jerusalem.*

AND Jesus entred and passed through Jericho.

2 And behold, there was a man named Zacheus, which was the chief among the publicanes, and he was rich.

3 And he fought to see Jesus who he was, & could not for the Preasse, because he was little of stature.

4 And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycomore-tree to see him: for he was to passe that way.

5 And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up and saw him, and said unto him, Zacheus, make haste, and come down, for to day I must abide at thy house.

6 And he made haste, and came downe, and received him joyfully.

7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to bee guest with a man that is a sinner.

8 And Zacheus stood, and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poore, and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold.

9 And Jesus said unto him, This day is salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is the son of Abraham.

10 For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.

11 And as they heard these things, he added, and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem and because they thought that the kingdome of God should immediatly appear.

12 He said therefore, A certain noble-man went into a far countrey to receive for himself a kingdome, and to return.

13 And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reigne over us.

15 And

15 And it came to passe, that when he was returned having received the kingdome, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.

17 And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithfull in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound, hath gained five pounds.

19 And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities.

20 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is thy pound which I have kept laid up in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

22 And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not downe, and reaping that I did not sow.

23 Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury?

24 And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds.

25 (And they said unto him, Lord, hee hath ten pounds.)

26 For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath, shall be given: And from him that hath not, even that hee hath shall bee taken away from him.

27 But those mine enemies which would not that I should reigne over them, bring hither and slay them before me.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

29 And it came to passe, when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples,

30 Saying Go ye into the village over against you, in the which at your entring ye shall finde a colt tyed, whereon yet never man sat: loose him, and bring him hither.

31 And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose him? thus shall ye say unto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.

32 And they that were sent, went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.

33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them, why loose ye the colt?

34 And they said, the Lord hath need of him.

35 And they brought him to Jesus: and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon.

36 And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.

37 And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoyce and praise God with a loud voice, for all the mighty works that they had seen.

38 Saying, blessed be the king that cometh in the name of the Lord, peace in heaven and glory in the highest.

39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

40 And he answered and said unto them, I tell you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediatly cry out.

41 ¶ And when he was come near, hee beheld the city, and wept over it.

42 Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, ¶ things which belong unto thy peace: but now they are hid from thine eyes.

43 For the daves shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compasse thee round, and keep thee in one every side.

44 And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee: and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another, because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

45 And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought.

46 Saying

46 Saying unto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of theeves.

47 And he taught daily in the temple. But the chief priests and the Scribes, and the chief of the people sought to destroy him,

48 And could not finde what they might do: for all the people were very attentive to hear him.

## CHAP. XX.

*1 Christ avoucheth his authority, by a question of Iohns baptisme. 9 The parable of the vineyard*

AND it came to passe, that on one of those daies as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chief priests and the Scribes came upon him, with the elders,

2 And spake unto him saying, Tell us, By what authority dost thou these things? or who is he that gave thee this authority?

3 And he answered and said unto them, I will also ask you one thing, and answere me.

4 The baptisme of John, was it from heaven or of men?

5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying If we shall say, From heaven, he will say, Why then beleeved ye him not?

6 But and if we say, Of men, all the people will stone us: for they be perswaded that John was a prophet.

7 And they answered, that they could not tell whence *it was*.

8 And Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

9 Then began he to speak to the people this parable: A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a far countrey for a long time.

10 And at the season, he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away empty.

11 And again hee sent another servant, and they beat him also and entreated him shamefully and sent him away empty.

12 And againe he sent the third: and they wounded him also, and cast him out.

13 Then said the Lord of the vineyard, What

shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence him when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir, come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore shall the Lord of the vineyard do unto them?

16 He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17 And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner.

18 Whosoever shall fall upon that stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

19 ¶ And the chief Priests and the Scribes the same houre sought to lay hands on him, and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies which would feigne themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governour.

21 And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person of *any*, but teachest the way of God truly.

22 Is it lawfull for us to give tribute unto Cesar or no?

23 But he perceived their craftinesse, and said unto them, why tempt ye me?

24 Shew me a peny: Whose image and superscription hath it? they answered and said, Cesars.

25 And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Cesar, the things which be Cesars, and unto God the things which be Gods.

26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people, and they marvelled at his answere, and held their peace.

27 ¶ Then came to him certaine of the Sadducees (which deny that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,

28 Saying

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any mans brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

29 There were therefore seven brethren, and the first took a wife, and died without children.

30 And the second took her to wife, and hee died childelesse.

31 And the third took her, and in like manner the seven also. And they left no children, & died.

32 Last of all, the woman died also.

33 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is shee? for seven had her to wife.

34 And Jesus answering said unto them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage:

35 But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage.

36 Neither can they die any more: for they are equall unto the angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

37 Now that the dead are raised, even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.

38 For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him.

39 ¶ Then certaine of the Scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said.

40 And after that, they durst not ask him any question at all.

41 And he said unto them, How say they that Christ is Davids son?

42 And David himselfe saith in the book of Psalmes, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

43 Till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

44 David therefore calleth him Lord, how is hee then his son?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people, he said unto his disciples,

46 Beware of the Scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts.

47 Which devoure widows houſes, and for a ſhow make long prayers: the ſame ſhall receive greater damnation.

## CHAP. XXI.

1 *The poore widow is commended.* 5 *The deſtruction of the temple and city is foretold.* 13 *The ſignes before the laſt day.*

AND he looked up, and ſaw the rich men caſting their gifts into the treaſury

2 And hee ſaw alſo a certaine poore widow, caſting in thither two mites.

3 And he ſaid, Of a truth I ſay unto you, that this poore widow hath caſt in more then they all

4 For all theſe have of their abundance caſt in unto the offerings of God, but ſhe of her penury hath caſt in all the living that ſhe had.

5 ¶ And as ſome ſpake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly ſtones, and gifts, he ſaid

6 As for theſe things which ye behold, the dayes will come, in the which there ſhall not be left one ſtone upon another, that ſhall not be thrown down

7 And they asked him, ſaying, Maſter, but when ſhall theſe things be? and what ſigne will there be when theſe things ſhall come to paſſe.

8 And he ſaid, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many ſhall come in my name, ſaying, I am *Chriſt*, and the time draweth near, go ye not therefore after them.

9 But when ye ſhall hear of warres and commotions be not terrified: for theſe things muſt firſt come to paſſe, but the end is not by and by.

10 Then ſaid he unto them, Nation ſhall riſe againſt nation, and kingdome againſt kingdome:

11 And great earthquakes ſhall bee in diverſe places, and famines, and peſtilences, and fearfull ſights, and great ſignes ſhall there be from heaven

12 But before all theſe they ſhall lay their hands on you, and perſecute you, delivering you up to the ſynagogues, and into priſons, being brought before kings & rulers for my names ſake

13 And it ſhall turn to you for a teſtimony.

14 Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before, what ye ſhall anſwere.

15 For I will give you a mouth and wiſdome, which all your adverſaries ſhall not be able to gainſay, nor reſiſt.

16 And ye shall bee betrayed both by parents and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends, and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.

17 And yee shall bee hated of all men for my names sake.

18 But there shall not an hair of your head perish.

19 In your patience possesse ye your soules.

20 And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.

21 Then let them which are in Judea, flee to the mountains, and let them which are in the midst of it, depart out, and let not them that are in the countreys, enter thereinto.

22 For these bee the dayes of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

23 But wo unto them that are with childe, and to them that give suck in those dayes; for there shall be great distresse in the land, and wrath upon this people.

24 And they shal fall by the edge of the sword, and shal be led away captive into all nations, and Jerusalem shall be troden down of the Gentiles, untill the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

25 ¶ And there shall be signes in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars, and upon the earth distresse of nations, with perplexitie, the sea and the waves roaring.

26 Mens hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth; for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.

28 And when these things begin to come to passe, then look up, and lift up your heads, for your redemption draweth nigh.

29 And he spake to them a parable, Behold the fig tree, and all the trees,

30 When they now shoot forth, yee see and know of your own selves, that summer is now nigh at hand.

31 So likewise yee, when ye see these things come to passe, know ye that the kingdome of God is nigh at hand.

32 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall

not passe away, till all be fulfilled.

33 Heaven and earth shall passe away: but my words shall not passe away.

34 ¶ And take heed to your selves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfetting, and drunkennesse, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch ye therefore and pray always, that ye may bee accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to passe, and to stand before the Son of man.

37 And in the day time he was teaching in the temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called the mount of Olives.

38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him.

## CHAP. XXII.

*The Iews conspire against Christ. 3 Satan entreth into Iudas. 7 The passeover prepared.*

NOw the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the passeover.

2 And the chief priests and Scribes sought how they might kill him: for they feared the people.

3 ¶ Then entred Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them.

5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.

6 And he promised and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

7 ¶ Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passeover must be killed.

8 And he sent peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passeover that we may eat.

9 And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?

10 And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entred into the city, there shall a man meet you bearing a pitcher of water, follow him into the house where he entreth in.

11 And

11 And ye shall say unto the good man of the house, The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber where I shall eat the passeover with my disciples?

12 And he shall shew you a large upper room furnished, there make ready.

13 And they went and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passeover.

14 And when the houre was come, he sat down and the twelve apostles with him.

15 And he said unto them with desire I have desired to eat this passeover with you before I suffer

16 For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof untill it be fulfilled in ℣ kingdome of God

17 And he tooke the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this and divide it among your selves.

18 For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, untill ℣ kingdome of God shall come

19 ¶ And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body, which is given for you, this do in remembrance of me.

20 Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my bloud, which is shed for you.

21 ¶ But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me on the table.

22 And truly the Son of man goeth as it was determined, but wo unto that man by whom he is betrayed.

23 And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.

24 ¶ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.

25 And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them, & they that exercise authority upon them, are called benefactors

26 But ye shall not be so, but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger, and he that is chief, as he that doth serve.

27 For whether is greater he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth

28 Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations.

29 And

29 And I appoint unto you a kingdome, as my
father hath appointed unto me:
30 That ye may eat and drinke at my table in
my Kingdome, and sit on thrones, judging the
twelve tribes of Israel.
31 ¶ And the Lord said, Simon Simon, behold
Satan hath desired *to have* you, that he may sift
you as wheat:
32 But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith
fail not, and when thou art converted, strengthen
thy brethren.
33 And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to
go with thee both into prison, and to death.
34 And he said, I tell thee Peter, the cock shall
not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice
deny that thou knowest me.
35 And he said unto them, When I sent you
without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye
any thing? And they said, nothing.
36 Then said he unto them, But now hee that
hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his
scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his
garment, and buy one.
37 For I say unto you, that this that is written
must yet be accomplished in me and he was reckoned among the transgressours: for the things
concerning me have an end.
38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two
swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.
39 ¶ And he came out, and went, as he was
wont, to the mount of Olives, and his disciples
also followed him.
40 And when he was at the place, he said unto
them, pray, that ye enter not into temptation.
41 And he was withdrawn from them about a
stones cast, and kneeled down, and prayed,
42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove
this cup from me: nevertheless, not my will but
thine be done.
43 And there appeared an angel unto him from
heaven, strengthening him.
44 And being in an agony, he prayed more
earnestly, and his sweat was as it were great drops
of blood falling down to the ground.
45 And when he rose up from prayer, and was
come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for
sorrow.
46 And

46 And said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

47 ¶ And while he yet spake, behold, a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus, to kisse him

48 But Jesus said unto him. Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kisse?

49 When they which were about him, saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord shall we smite with the sword?

50 ¶ And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear.

51 And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him.

52 Then Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders which were come to him Be ye come out as against a thief, with swords and staves?

53 When I was daily with you in the temple ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour and the power of darknesse.

54 ¶ Then took they him and led him, and brought him into the high priests house. And Peter followed a far off.

55 And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down among them.

56 But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him

57 And he denied him, saying. Woman I know him not.

58 And after a little while another saw him, and said, thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of one houre after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this fellow also was with him; for he is a Galilean.

60 And Peter said, Man I know not what thou sayest. And immediatly while he yet spake, the cock crew.

61 And the Lord turned and looked upon Peter and Peter remembred the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow thou shalt denie me thrice.

61 And

62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

63 ¶ And the men that held Jesus, mocked him, and smote him.

64 And when they had blindefolded him, they stroke him on the face, and asked him, saying, prophesie who is it that smote thee?

65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

66 ¶ And assoon as it was day, the elders of the people, and the chief priests and the Scribes came together, and led him into their councel,

67 Saying, Art thou the Christ? Tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, you will not believe,

68 And if I also ask you, you will not answer me, nor let me go.

69 Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, Ye say that I am.

71 And they said, What need wee any further witnesse? for we our selves have heard of his own mouth.

## CHAP. XXIII.

*1 Jesus is accused before Pilate, 7 Sent to Herod, 11 Sent back again, 25 delivered to be crucified.*

AND the whole multitude of them arose, and led him unto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, Wee found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying, that he himself is Christ a king.

3 And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews? And he answered him and said, Thou sayest it.

4 Then said pilate to the chief priests and other people, I finde no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying he stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jury, beginning from Galilee to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And assoon as he knew that he belonged unto Herods jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself was also at Jerusalem at that time.

8 ¶ And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad, for he was desirous to see him of a long

season

season, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him.

9 Then he questioned with him in many words, but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chief priests and Scribes stood and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herod with his men of war set him at naught, and mocked him and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

12 ¶ And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before they were at enmity between themselves.

13 ¶ And Pilate when he had called together the chiefe priests, and the rulers, and the people.

14 Said unto them, Yee have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people, and behold, I having examined him before you, have found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him:

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him. & lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him.

17 For of necessity hee must release one unto them at the feast.

18 And they cried out all at once, saying away with this man, and release unto us Barrabbas:

19 (Who for a certain sedition, made in the city, and for murder was cast in prison.

20 Pilate therefore willing to release Jesus, spake againe to them)

21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him.

22 And hee said unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him, I will therefore chastise him, and let him go.

23 And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the chief Priests prevailed.

24 And Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they required.

25 And he released unto them, him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired, but he delivered Jesus to their will.

26 And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon a Cyrenian, coming out of the countrey, and on him they laid the crosse, that he might bear it after Jesus.

27 ¶ And there followed him a great company of people and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.

28 But Jesus turning unto them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for your selves and for your children.

29 For behold, the dayes are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren and the wombe that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.

30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountains Fall on us: and to the hils, Cover us.

31 For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

32 And there were also two other malefactours led with him to be put to death.

33 And when they were come to the place which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactours, one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

34 ¶ Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do, and they parted his raiment and cast lots.

35 And the people stood beholding, and the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saved others, let him save himself if he be Christ the chosen of God.

36 And the souldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vineger.

37 And saying, If thou be the king of the Jews save thy self.

38 And a superscription was written over him in letters of Greek, and Latine, and Hebrew. THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

39 ¶ And one of the malefactours which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ save thy selfe and us.

40 But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Doest not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds, but this man hath done nothing amisse,

42 And

42 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdome.

43 And Jesus said unto him Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

44 And it was about the sixth hour. and there was a darknesse over all the earth untill the ninth houre.

45 And the sun was darkened, and the vail of the Temple was rent in the mids.

46 ¶ And when Jesus had cryed with a loud voice, hee said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.

47 Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off beholding these things.

50 ¶ And behold there was a man named Joseph, a counseller, & he was a good man and a just

51 (The same had not consented to the counsell and deed of them) he was of Arimathea, a city of the Jews (who also himself waited for the kingdome of God)

52 This man went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

53 And hee tooke it downe, and wrapped it in linen and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewen in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

54 And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre and how his body was laid.

56 And they returned and prepared spices and ointments and rested the sabbath day, according to the commandment.

## CHAP. XXIIII.

1 *Christs resurrection declared to two women*
9 *They report it to others.*

NOw upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre

sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certaine *others* with them.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

3 And they entred in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

4 And it came to passe, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments.

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, why seek ye the living among the dead?

6 He is not here, but is risen: remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee.

7 Saying, the Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinfull men, and bee crucified, and the third day rise againe.

8 And they remembred his words.

9 And returned from the sepulchre and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

10 It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary *the mother* of James, and other women that were with them, which told these things unto the apostles.

11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they beleeved them not.

12 Then arose Peter, and ran unto the sepulchre and stowping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondering in himself at that which was come to passe.

13 ¶ And behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlongs.

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it came to passe, that while they communed together, and reasoned: Jesus himselfe drew near, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him.

17 And he said unto them, What manner of communications are these that yee have one to another as ye walk, and are sad?

18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the

things

things w are come to passe there in these dayes?

19 And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet, mighty in deed and word before God and all the people.

20 And how the chiefe priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had been he, which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this to day is the third day since these things were done.

22 Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre:

23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive.

24 And certaine of them which were with us, went to the sepulchre and found it even so as the women had said, but him they saw not.

25 Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to beleeve all that the prophets have spoken

26 Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?

27 And beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures, the things concerning himselfe.

28 And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went, and he made as though he would have gone further.

29 But they constrained him saying, Abide with us, for it is towards evening, and the day is farre spent: and he went in to tarry with them.

30 And it came to passe, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them.

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him, and he vanished out of their sight.

32 And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

33 And they rose up the same houre, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Saying, the Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And

35 And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

36 ¶ And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

37 But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

38 And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?

39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and his feet.

41 And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondred, he said unto them, have ye here any meat?

42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an hony comb.

43 And he took it, and did eat before them.

44 And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the Psalmes concerning me.

45 Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures.

46 And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:

47 And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name, among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.

48 And ye are witnesses of these things.

49 ¶ And behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

50 ¶ And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lift up his hands, and blessed them.

51 And it came to passe, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy:

53 And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God, Amen.

THE

# THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. IOHN.

## CHAP. I.

1 *Christs divinity, humanity and office.* 15 *Iohns testimony of him.* 39 *The calling of Andrew, Peter. &c.*

IN the beginning was the word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

2 The same was in the beginning with God.

3 All things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made that was made.

4 *In* him was life, and the life was the light of men.

5 And the light shineth in darkenesse, and the darkenesse comprehended it not.

6 ¶ There was a man sent from God, whose name was Iohn.

7 The same came for a witnesse, to bear witnesse of the light, that all men through him might beleeve.

8 He was not that light, but *was sent* to bear witnesse of that light.

9 That was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

10 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that beleeve on his name:

13 Which were borne not of bloud, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14 And the word was made flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the father) full of grace and truth.

15 ¶ Iohn

15 ¶ John bare witnesse of him and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me, is preferred before me, for he was before me.

16 And of his fulnesse have all we received, and grace for grace.

17 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

18 No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him.

19 ¶ And this is the record of John when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem, to ask him, who art thou?

20 And he confessed, and denied not: but confessed, I am not the Christ.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? and he answered, No.

22 Then said they unto him, Who art thou, that we may give an answere to them that sent us: what sayest thou of thyself?

23 He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wildernesse, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias.

24 And they which were sent, were of the Pharisees.

25 And they asked him, and said unto him, why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet?

26 John answered them, saying, I baptize with water, but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not,

27 He it is who coming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to unloose.

28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan where John was baptizing.

29 ¶ The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world.

30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man, which is preferred before me: for he was before me.

31 And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

31 And

32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven, like a dove, and it abode upon him.

33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.

35 ¶ Again the next day after, John stood, and two of his disciples;

36 And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God.

37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.

38 Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, being interpreted, Master) where dwellest thou?

39 He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abod with him that day: for it was about the tenth houre.

40 One of the two which heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peters brother.

41 He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, the Christ.

42 And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the Son of Jona, thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a stone.

43 ¶ The day following, Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, follow me.

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the City of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him of whom Moses in the Law and the Prophets did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph.

46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, come and see.

47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and

15 ¶ John bare witnesse of him and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me, is preferred before me, for he was before me.

16 And of his fulnesse have all we received, and grace for grace.

17 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

18 No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him.

19 ¶ And this is the record of John when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem, to ask him, who art thou?

20 And he confessed, and denied not: but confessed, I am not the Christ.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? and he answered, No.

22 Then said they unto him, Who art thou, that we may give an answere to them that sent us: what sayest thou of thyself?

23 He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wildernesse, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias.

24 And they which were sent, were of the Pharisees.

25 And they asked him, and said unto him, why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet?

26 John answered them, saying, I baptize with water, but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not,

27 He it is who coming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to unloose.

28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan where John was baptizing.

29 ¶ The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world.

30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man, which is preferred before me: for he was before me.

31 And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

32 And

32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven, like a dove, and it abode upon him.

33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I saw, and bare record that this is the Son of God.

35 ¶ Again the next day after, John stood, and two of his disciples;

36 And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lambe of God.

37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.

38 Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, being interpreted, Master) where dwellest thou?

39 He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abod with him that day: for it was about the tenth houre.

40 One of the two which heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peters brother.

41 He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, the Christ.

42 And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the Son of Jona, thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a stone.

43 ¶ The day following, Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, follow me.

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the City of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him of whom Moses in the Law and the Prophets did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph.

46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, come and see.

47 Jesus saw Nathanael comming to him, and

seeth of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile.

48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig-tree, I saw thee.

49 Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art the King of Israel.

50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these.

51 And he saith unto him, Verily, verily I say unto you, Hereafter you shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

## CHAP. II.

*1 Christ turneth water into wine, 12 departeth into Capernaum, and Jerusalem, 15 and purgeth the temple.*

AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee, & the mother of Jesus was there.

2 And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine.

4 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine houre is not yet come.

5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it.

6 And there were set there six water pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins a piece.

7 Jesus saith unto them, Fill the water pots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.

8 And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governour of the feast. And they bare it.

9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the servants which drew the water knew) the governour of the feast called the bridegroom,

10 And saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine, and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine until now.

11 This

11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory, and his disciples believed on him.

12 ¶ After this, he went down to Capernaum, he and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: and they continued there not many dayes.

13 ¶ And the Iews Passeover was at hand, and Iesus went up to Ierusalem,

14 And found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money, sitting.

15 And when hee had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen: and poured out the changers money, and overthrew the tables:

16 And said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence: make not my fathers house an house of merchandize.

17 And his disciples remembred that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.

18 ¶ Then answered the Iews, and said unto him, What signe shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things?

19 Iesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three dayes I will raise it up.

20 Then said the Iews, Fourtie and six yeares was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three dayes?

21 But he spake of the temple of his body.

22 When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembred that he had said this unto them. And they believed the Scripture, and the word which Iesus had said.

23 ¶ Now when he was in Ierusalem at the Passeover, in the feast day, many believed in his Name, when they saw the miracles which hee did.

24 But Iesus did not commit himself unto them, because hee knew all men:

25 And needed not that any should testifie of man: for he knew what was in man.

## CHAP. III.

*Christ teacheth Nicodemus the necessitie of regeneration. 14 Of faith in Christ.*

THere was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Iews.

2 The same came to Iesus by night, and said unto

unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily verily I say unto thee, except a man be borne again, he cannot see the kingdome of God.

4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be borne when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mothers wombe, and be borne?

5 Jesus answered, Verily verily I say unto thee, except a man be borne of water, and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdome of God.

6 That which is borne of the flesh, is flesh, and that which is borne of the Spirit, is Spirit.

7 Marvell not that I said unto thee, Ye must be borne again.

8 The winde bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh and whither it goeth: so is every one that is borne of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be?

10 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verily verily I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testifie that we have seen, and ye receive not our witnesse.

12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe if I tell you of heavenlie things?

13 And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, *even* the Son of man which is in heaven.

14 ¶ And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wildernesse: even so must the Son of man be lifted up:

15 That whosoever believeth in him, should not perish, but have eternall life.

16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son: that whosoever believeth in him, should not perish, but have everlasting life.

17 For God sent not his Son into the world to condemne the world: but that the world through him might be saved.

18 ¶ He that believeth on him, is not condemned: but he that believeth not, is condemned already

already, because he hath not believed in the Name of the only begotten Son of God.

19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather then light, because their deeds were evil.

20 For every one that doth evil, hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved.

21 But he that doth truth, cometh to the light that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

22 ¶ After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judea, and there he tarried with them, and baptized.

23 ¶ And John also was baptizing in Aenon, near to Salim, because there was much water there; and they came, and were baptized.

24 For John was not yet cast into prison.

25 ¶ Then there arose a question between some of Johns disciples and the Jews, about purifying.

26 And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou bearest witnesse, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him.

27 John answered and said, A man can receive nothing except it bee given him from heaven.

28 Ye your selves bear me witnesse, that I said I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

29 He that hath the bride, is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroome, which standeth and heareth him rejoyceth greatly because of the bridegrooms voice: This my joy therefore is fulfilled.

30 He must increase, but I *must* decrease.

31 He that cometh from above, is above all: he that is of the earth, is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he that cometh from heaven is above all.

32 And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth: and no man receiveth his testimony.

33 He that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seal, that God is true,

34 For *he* whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure *unto him*.

35 The Father loveth the Son and hath given all things into his hand.

36 He that believeth on the Son, hath everlasting

life: and he that believeth not the Son, shall not see life: but the wrath of God abideth on him.

## CHAP. IIII.

*Christ talketh with the woman of Samaria, and Revealeth himself unto her.*

WHen therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Iesus made and baptized moe disciples then Iohn.

2 (Though Iesus himself baptized not, but his disciples)

3 He left Iudea, & departed again unto Galilee.

4 And he must needs go through Samaria.

5 Then cometh hee to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Iacob gave to his son Ioseph.

6 Now Iacobs well was there. Iesus therefore being wearied with his journey, sate thus on the well: and it was about the sixth houre.

7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Iesus saith unto her, Give me to drink.

8 For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou being a Iew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Iews have no dealing with the Samaritanes.

10 Iesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give mee to drink, thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.

11 The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water?

12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattell?

13 Iesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again:

14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him, shall never thirst: but the water that I shall give him, shall bee in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.

15 The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Iesus

16 Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband:

18 For thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly.

19 The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain, and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

21 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the houre cometh when ye shall neither in this mountaine, nor yet at Jerusalem worship the Father.

22 Yee worship yee know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jewes.

23 But the houre cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

24 God is a Spirit, and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in truth.

25 The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh which is called Christ: when hee is come, he will tell us all things.

26 Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee, am he.

27 ¶ And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that hee talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her water-pot and went her way into the city, and saith to the men,

29 Come, see a man which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ?

30 Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

31 ¶ In the meane while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat.

32 But hee said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of.

33 Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him ought to eat?

34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the

will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.

35 Say ye not, There are yet foure moneths and then cometh harvest? Behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields: for they are white already to harvest.

36 And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternall: that both he that soweth and he that reapeth, may rejoyce together.

37 And herein is that saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reape that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred into their labours.

39 ¶ And many of the Samaritanes of that city beleeved on him, for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that ever I did.

40 So when the Samaritanes were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two dayes.

41 And many more beleeved, because of his owne word:

42 And said unto the woman, Now we beleeve not because of thy saying: for we have heard him our selves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

43 ¶ Now after two dayes, he departed thence, and went into Galilee.

44 For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his owne country.

45 Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.

46 So Jesus came againe into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certaine nobleman whose son was sick at Capernaum.

47 When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come downe and heale his son: for he was at the point of death.

48 Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signes and wonders, ye will not beleeve.

49 The noble man saith unto him, Sir, come downe ere my child die.

50 Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way, thy son liveth. And the man beleeved the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and hee went his way.

51 And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told *him*, saying thy son liveth.

52 Then enquired hee of them the houre when he began to amend: and they said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh houre the fever left him.

53 So the father knew that it was at the same houre, in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself beleeved, and his whole house.

54 This *is* again the second miracle *that* Jesus did, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

## CHAP. V.

*1 Jesus on the Sabbath-day cureth him that was diseased eight and thirtie years.*

AFter this there was a feast of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

2 Now there *is* at Jerusalem by the sheep-*market* a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue, Bethesda, having five porches.

3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blinde, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.

4 For an Angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

5 And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years.

6 When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time *in that case*, hee saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.

8 Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and took up *his* bed, and walked: and on the same day was the Sabbath.

10 ¶ The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the Sabbath-day, it is not lawfull for thee to carry *thy* bed.

11 He answered them, He that made me whole the same said unto me, Take up thy bed and walk.

12 Then asked they him, what man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed and walk?

13 And hee that was healed, wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in that place.

14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.

15 The man departed, and told the Jewes that it was Jesus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath-day.

17 ¶ But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

18 Therefore the Jewes sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the Sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, making himself equall with God.

19 Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever hee doth, these also doth the Son likewise.

20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doth: and he will shew him greater works then these that ye may marvell.

21 For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them: even so the Sonne quickeneth whom he will.

22 For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgement unto the Son:

23 That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. Hee that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.

24 Verily verily I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and beleeveth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation: but is passed from death unto life.

25 Verily verily I say unto you, The houre is coming, and now is, when the dead shall heare the voice of the Son of God: and they that heare shall live.

26 For as the Father hath life in himself, so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself,

27 And hath given him authority to execute judgement, also because he is the Son of man.

28 Marvell not at this: for the houre is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall heare his voice,

29 And shall come forth, they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life, and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

30 I can of my own self do nothing, as I heare I judge: and my judgement is just, because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

31 If I bear witnesse of my self, my witnesse is not true.

32 There is another that beareth witnesse of me, and I know that the witnesse which hee witnesseth of me, is true,

33 Ye sent unto John, and he bare witnesse unto the truth.

34 But I receive not testimonie from man: but these things I say that ye might be saved.

35 He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoyce in his light.

36 † But I have greater witnesse then that of John: for the works which the Father hath given mee to finish, the same works that I do, bear witnesse of me, that the Father hath sent me

37 And the Father himself which hath sent me, hath born witnesse of me. Yee have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape.

38 And yee have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye beleeve not.

39 † Search the Scriptures, for in them ye think yee have eternall life, and they are they which testifie of me.

40 And ye will not come to me, that yee might have life.

41 I receive not honour from men.

42 But I know you, that yee have not the love of God in you.

43 I am come in my fathers name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his owne name, him ye will receive.

44 How can ye beleeve, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that commeth from God only?

45 Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is *one* that accuseth you, *even* Moses, in whom ye trust.

46 For had ye beleeved Moses, ye would have beleeved me; for he wrot of me.

47 But if ye beleeve not his writings, how shall ye beleeve my words?

## CHAP. VI.

*5 Christ feedeth five thousand men with five loaves and two fishes. 32 Declareth himself to be the bread of life.*

AFter these things, Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, *which is the sea* of Tiberias,

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

3 And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sate with his disciples.

4 And the passeover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh.

5 ¶ When Jesus then lift up his eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip, whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat?

6 (And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do.)

7 Philip answered him, Two hundred penyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother, saith unto him,

9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grasse in the place. So the men sate down, in number about five thousand.

11 And Jesus took the loaves, and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down, and likewise of the fishes, as much as they would.

12 When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remaine, that nothing be lost.

13 There-

13 Therefore they gathered *them* together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten.

14 Then those men, when they had *seen* the miracle that Jesus did, said, This Is of a truth that Prophet that should come into the world.

15 ¶ When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a King, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

16 And when even was now come his disciples went down unto the Sea.

17 And entred into a ship, and went over the Sea toward Capernaum: and it was now darke, and Jesus was not come to them.

18 And the Sea arose, by reason of a great wind that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about five and twenty, or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the Sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.

20 But he saith unto them, It is I, be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the ship: and immediatly the ship was at the land whether they went.

22 ¶ The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the Sea, saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entred, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat but that his disciples were gone away alone:

23 (Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto the place where they did eat bread after that the Lord had given thanks:)

24 When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum seeking for Jesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the Sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 Jesus answered them and said, Verily verily I say unto you, Ye seek me not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves and were filled.

27 Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but

but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed.

28 Then said they unto him, What shall we do that we might work the works of God?

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye beleeve on him whom he hath sent.

30 They said therefore unto him, What signe shewest thou then, that wee may see, and beleeve thee? what doest thou work?

31 Our fathers did eat manna in the desert, as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

32 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven, but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.

33 For the bread of God is hee which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.

34 Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread.

35 And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: hee that cometh to mee, shall never hunger, and hee that beleeveth on me, shall never thirst.

36 But I said unto you, that ye also have seen me, and beleeve not.

37 All that the Father giveth mee, shall come to me: and him that cometh to mee, I will in no wise cast out.

38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given mee, I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent me that every one which seeth the Son, and beleeveth on him may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

41 The Jews then murmured at him, because hee said, I am the bread which came down from heaven.

42 And they said, Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven?

43 Jesus

43 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmure not among your selves.

44 No man can come to mee, except the Father which hath sent mee, draw him, and I will raise him up at the last day.

45 It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto mee.

46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

47 Verily verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

49 Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead.

50 This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

51 I am the living bread, which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give, is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore strove amongst themselves, saying, How can this man give us his flesh to eat?

53 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.

54 Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I will raise him up at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

56 Hee that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so, he that eateth me, even he shall live by mee.

58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever.

59 These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard this, said, This is an hard saying, who can hear it?

61 When Jesus knew in himself, that his disciples

ster murmured at it, he said unto them, Doeth this offend you?

62 What and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before?

63 It is the Spirit that quickneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are Spirit, and they are life.

64 But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning, who they were that believed not, and who should betray him.

65 And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

66 ¶ From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the words of eternal life.

69 And we believe, and are sure that thou art that Christ the Son of the living God.

70 Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?

71 He spake of Judas Iscariot the son of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

## CHAP. VII.

*Jesus reproveth his kinsmen:* 10 *goeth up to the feast of Tabernacles,* 14 *teacheth in the temple.*

AFter these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jury, because the Jews sought to kill him.

2 Now the Jews feast of Tabernacles was at hand.

3 His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy Disciples also may see the works that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doeth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly: if thou do these things, shew thy self to the world.

5 For neither did his brethren believe in him.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testifie of it, that the works thereof are evil.

8 Go ye up into this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast, for my time is not yet full come.

9 When he had said these words unto them, he abode *still* in Galilee.

10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

11 Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: For some said, He is a good man: others said, Nay, but he deceiveth the people.

13 Howbeit, no man spake openlie of him, for fear of the Jews.

14 ¶ Now about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple and taught.

15 And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned?

16 Jesus answered them and said, my doctrine is not mine but his that sent me.

17 If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of my self.

18 He that speaketh of himself seeketh his owne glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousnesse is in him.

19 Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law. Why go ye about to kill me?

20 The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvell.

22 Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision, (not because it is of Moses, but of the Fathers) and ye on the Sabbath-day circumcise a man.

23 If a man on the Sabbath-day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken, are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the Sabbath-day?

24 Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgement.

25 Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he whom they seek to kill?

26 But lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing

thing unto him: doe the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ?

27 Howbeit wee know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence hee is.

28 Then cryed Iesus in the temple, as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and yee know whence I am and I am not come of my self, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him, for I am from him, and he hath sent mee.

30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his houre was not yet come.

31 And many of the people beleeved on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do moe miracles then these which this man hath done?

32 ¶ The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him: and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Iesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you & then I go unto him that sent me.

34 Ye shall seek me, and shall not finde me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come.

35 Then said the Iews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not finde him? will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles?

36 What manner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek mee, and shall not finde mee: and where I am, thither ye cannot come?

37 In the last day, that great day of the feast, Iesus stood and cryed, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.

38 He that beleeveth on mee, as the Scripture hath said, Out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.

39 (But this spake he of the spirit, which they that beleeve on him should receive: for the holy Ghost was not yet given, because that Iesus was not yet glorified)

40 ¶ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the prophet.

41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?

42 Hath not the Scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town

of

of Bethlehem, where David was?

43 So there was a division among the people because of him.

44 And some of them would have taken him, but no man laid hands on him.

45 ¶ Then came the officers to the chief priests and pharisees, and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Never man spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived?

48 Have any of the rulers, or of the Pharisees believed on him?

49 But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed.

50 Nicodemus saith unto them, (bee that came to Iesus by night, being one of them)

51 Doth our law judge any man before it hear him, and know what he doth?

52 They answered, and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search and look: for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.

53 And every man went into his own house.

## CHAP. VIII.

*4 Christ delivereth the woman taken in adultery. 12 Preacheth himselfe the light of the world.*

IEsus went unto the mount of Olives:

2 And early in the morning hee came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him, and he sate down, and taught them.

3 And the Scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adulterie, and when they had set her in the midst,

4 They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adulterie, in the very act.

5 Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Iesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground as though hee heard them not.

7 So when they continued asking him, he lift up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

8 And again he stouped down, and wrote on the ground.

9 And

9 And they which heard it, being conuicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, euen vnto the last: and Iesus was left alone and the woman standing in the midst.

10 When Iesus had lift up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said vnto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 She said, no man Lord. And Iesus said vnto her, Neither doe I condemne thee: go and sin no more.

12 ¶ Then spake Iesus againe vnto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me, shall not walk in darknesse, but shall haue the light of life.

13 The Pharisees therefore said vnto him, Thou beareſt record of thy selfe: thy record is not true.

14 Iesus answered and said vnto them, Though I beare record of my selfe, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whether I go: but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whether I go.

15 Ye iudge after the flesh, I iudge no man.

16 And yet if I iudge, my iudgement is true: for I am not alone, but I and the father that sent me.

17 It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true.

18 I am one that beare witnesse of my selfe, and the Father that sent me beareth witnesse of me.

19 Then said they vnto him, Where is thy Father? Iesus answered, ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should haue known my father also.

20 These words spake Iesus in the treasury as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him, for his houre was not yet come.

21 Then said Iesus againe vnto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whether I go, ye cannot come.

22 Then said the Iewes, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whether I go ye cannot come.

23 And he said vnto them, Ye are from beneath, I am from aboue: ye are of this world, I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore vnto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye beleeue not that I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins.

25 Then

25 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And Jesus saith unto them, Even *the same* that I said unto you from the beginning.

26 I have many things to say, and to judge of you: but he that sent me, is true, and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.

27 They understood not that he spake to them of the Father.

28 Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lift up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am *he*, and *that* I do nothing of my self: but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.

29 And he that sent me, is with me: the Father hath not left me alone: For I do always those things that please him.

30 As he spake these words, many believed on him.

31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, *then* are ye my disciples indeed.

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 ¶ They answered him, We be Abrahams seed, and were never in bondage to any man, how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin, is the servant of sin.

35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: *but* the Son abideth ever.

36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seed, but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speak *that* which I have seen with my Father: and ye do *that* which ye have seen with your father.

39 They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication: we have one Father, *even* God.

42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me, for I proceeded forth, and came from God, neither came I of my self, but he sent me.

43 Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word.

44 Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

45 And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.

46 Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?

47 He that is of God, heareth Gods words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God.

48 Then answered the Iews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a devil?

49 Jesus answered, I have not a devil: but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.

50 And I seek not mine own glory, there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

51 Verily verily I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

52 Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the Prophets, and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thy self?

54 Jesus answered, If I honour my self, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God:

55 Yet ye have not known him, but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shal be a liar like unto you: but I know him & keep his saying.

56 Your father Abraham rejoyced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad.

57 Then said the Iews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?

58 Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then

59 Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

## CHAP. IX.

*1 He that was born blinde is restored to his sight.*
*13 He is brought to the Pharisees.*

AND as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blinde from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that hee was born blinde?

3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

4 I must work the works of him that sent mee, while it is day: the night cometh when no man can work.

5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

6 When he had thus spoken, hee spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blinde man with the clay,

7 And said unto him, Go wash in the pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, sent). He went his way therefore and washed, and came, seeing.

8 ¶ The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him, that hee was blinde, said, Is not this he that sate and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he.

10 Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight.

12 Then said they unto him, Where is he? Hee said, I know not.

13 They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blinde.

14 And it was the Sabbath-day when Jesus made the clay and opened his eyes.

15 Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, & do see.

16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This

man

man is not of God, because he keepeth not the Sabbath-day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner, do such miracles? and there was a division among them.

17 They say unto the blinde man againe, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

18 But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, untill they called the parents of him that had received his sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, whom ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see?

20 His parents answered them, and said, we know that this is our son, and that he was borne blinde:

21 But by what meanes he now seeth, we know not, or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age, aske him, he shall speak for himself.

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he should be put out of the Synagogue.

23 Therefore said his parents, he is of age, aske him.

24 Then againe called they the man that was blinde, and said unto him, Give God the praise, we know that this man is a sinner.

25 He answered and said, whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that whereas I was blinde, now I see.

26 Then said they to him againe, what did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it againe? Will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple, but we are Moses disciples.

29 We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doth his will, him he heareth.

32 Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was borne blinde.

33 If this man were not of God, he could doe nothing.

34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether borne in sins, and doest thou teach us? And they cast him out.

35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out: and when he had found him, he said unto him, Doest thou beleeve on the Son of God?

36 He answered and said, Who is he Lord, that I might beleeve on him?

37 And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And he said, Lord, I beleeve: And he worshipped him.

39 ¶ And Jesus said, For Judgement I am come into this world, that they which see not, might see; and that they which see might be made blinde.

40 And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blinde also?

41 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blinde ye should have no sin: but now ye say, we see: therefore your sin remaineth.

## CHAP. X.

1 *Christ is the doore, and the good Shepherd.* 4 *He proveth by his works that he is Christ.*

VErilie verilie I say unto you, he that entreth not by the doore into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thiefe and a robber.

2 But he that entreth in by the doore, is the shepherd of the sheep.

3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheep heare his voice, and he calleth his owne sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he putteth forth his owne sheep, he goeth before them: and the sheep follow him, for they know his voice.

5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.

6 This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

7 Then said Iesus vnto them again, Verily verily I say vnto you, I am the doore of the sheep.
8 All that ever came before mee are theeves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them.
9 I am the doore: by me if any man enter in, he shall bee saued: and shall go in and out, and finde pasture.
10 The theef cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might haue life, and that they might haue it more abundantly.
11 I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giueth his life for the sheep.
12 But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaueth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.
13 The hireling fleeth, because hee is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.
14 I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.
15 As the Father knoweth mee, euen so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.
16 And other sheep I haue, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice: and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd.
17 Therefore doth my Father loue me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it againe.
18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of my selfe: I haue power to lay it down, and I haue power to take it againe. This commandement haue I receiued of my Father.
19 ¶ There was a diuision therefore againe among the Iewes for these sayings.
20 And many of them said, He hath a deuil, and is mad: why hear ye him?
21 Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a deuil: Can a deuil open the eyes of the blinde?
22 ¶ And it was at Ierusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter.
23 And Iesus walked in the temple, in Solomons porch.
24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and said vnto him, How long doest thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.
25 Iesus

25 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye beleeved not: the works that I do in my Fathers name, they bear witnesse of me.

26 But ye beleeve not: because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

28 And I give unto them eternall life, and they shall never perish neither shall any *man* pluck them out of my hand.

29 My Father which gave *them* mee, is greater then all: and no man is able to pluck *them* out of my Fathers hand.

30 I and *my* Fathers are one.

31 Then ye Jews took up stones again to stone him.

32 Jesus answered them. Many good works have I shewed you from my Father: for which of those works do ye stone me?

33 The Jews answered him, saying. For a good work wee stone thee not; but for blasphemie, and because that thou being a man makest thy self God.

34 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, ye are gods?

35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken:

36 Say *ye of him*, whom the Father hath sanctified and sent into the world. Thou blasphemest; because I said I am the Son of God?

37 If I do not the works of my Father, beleeve me not?

38 But if I do, though ye beleeve not me, beleeve the works: that yee may know and beleeve that the Father *is* in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they sought again to take him: but he escaped out of their hand,

40 And went away again beyond Jordan into the place where Iohn at first baptized & there he abode

41 And many resorted unto him and said, Iohn did no miracle; but all things that Iohn spake of this man, were true.

42 And many beleeved on him there.

## CHAP. XI.

1 *Christ raiseth Lazarus foure dayes buried.* 47 *The priests and Pharisees gather a councell.*

NOw a certain man was sick *named* Lazarus of Bethany, ye town of Mary & her sister Martha.

3 (It was *that* Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.)

3 Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick.

4 When Jesus heard *that*, he said, this sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God: that the son of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two dayes still in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that saith he to *his* disciples, Let us go into Judea again.

8 *His* disciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee, and goest thou thither againe?

9 Jesus answered, Are there not twelve houres in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walke in the night, he stumbleth because there is no light in him.

11 These things said he, and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth, but I go that I may awake him out of sleep.

12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall doe well.

13 Howbeit Jesus spake of *his* death: but they thought that hee had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.

14 Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there (to the intent ye may believe) nevertheless, let us go unto him.

16 Then said Thomas which is called Didymus unto his fellow disciples, Let us also go that we may die with him.

17 Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lien in the grave foure dayes already.

18 (Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off)

19 And many of the Jewes came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Then Martha, assoon as she heard that Jesus

was

was comming,went and met him: but Mary sate still in the house.

21 Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord,if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

22 But I know, that even now whatsoever thou wilt ask of God,God will give it thee.

23 Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise againe.

24 Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.

25 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection,and the life: he that beleeveth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live.

26 And whosoever liveth, and beleeveth in me, shall never die. Beleevest thou this?

27 She saith unto him,Yea Lord,I beleeve that thou art the Christ the Son of God which should come into the world.

28 And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, the Master is come and calleth for thee.

29 Assoone as she heard *that*,she arose quickly, and came unto him.

30 Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Jews then which were with her in the house,and comforted her,when they saw Mary that she rose up hastily,and went out, followed her,saying,she goeth unto the grave,to weep there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him,she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

33 When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled,

34 And said,Where have ye laid him? They say unto him, Lord, come and see.

35 Jesus wept.

36 Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him.

37 And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blinde, have caused that even this man should not have died?

38 Jesus therefore again groning in himself, cometh to the grave. It was a cave & a stone lay upon it.

2 (It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.)

3 Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick.

4 When Jesus heard that, he said, this sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God: that the son of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two dayes still in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that saith he to his disciples, Let us go into Judea again.

8 His disciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee, and goest thou thither againe?

9 Jesus answered, Are there not twelve houres in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walke in the night, he stumbleth because there is no light in him.

11 These things said he, and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth, but I go that I may awake him out of sleep.

12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall doe well.

13 Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that hee had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.

14 Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there (to the intent ye may believe) nevertheless, let us go unto him.

16 Then said Thomas which is called Didymus unto his fellow disciples, Let us also go that we may die with him.

17 Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lien in the grave foure dayes already.

18 (Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off)

19 And many of the Jewes came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Then Martha, assoon as she heard that Jesus was

was coming, went and met him: but Mary sate still in the house.

21 Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

22 But I know, that even now whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.

23 Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise againe.

24 Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.

25 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that beleeveth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live.

26 And whosoever liveth, and beleeveth in me, shall never die. Beleevest thou this?

27 She saith unto him, Yea Lord, I beleeve that thou art the Christ the Son of God which should come into the world.

28 And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, the Master is come and calleth for thee.

29 Assoone as she heard that, she arose quickly, and came unto him.

30 Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she rose up hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, she goeth unto the grave, to weep there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

33 When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled,

34 And said, Where have ye laid him? They say unto him, Lord, come and see.

35 Jesus wept.

36 Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him.

37 And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blinde, have caused that even this man should not have died?

38 Jesus therefore again groning in himself, cometh to the grave. It was a cave & a stone lay upon it.

39 Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord by this time, hee stinketh: for he hath been dead foure dayes.

40 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou wouldest beleeve thou shouldest see the glory of God.

41 Then they tooke away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted vp his eyes, and said, Father I thank thee that thou hast heard me.

42 And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by, I said it, that they may beleeve that thou hast sent me.

43 And when he thus had spoken, he cryed with a loud voice, Lazarus come forth.

44 And hee that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

45 Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, beleeved on him.

46 But some of them went their wayes to the Pharisees, & told them what things Jesus had done.

47 ¶ Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a councel, and said, What do wee? for this man doth many miracles.

48 If wee let him this alone, all men will beleeve on him: and the Romanes shall come and take away both our place and nation.

49 And one of them named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same yeare, said unto them, Yee know nothing at all.

50 Nor consider that it is expedient for us that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.

51 And this spake hee not of himself: but being high priest that year, hee prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation:

52 And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one, the children of God that were scattered abroad.

53 Then from that day forth, they took counsel together for to put him to death.

54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly: a-

among the Jewes but went out thence into a countrey neare to the wildernesse, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

55 ¶ And the Iewes passeover was nigh at hand, and many went out of the countrey up to Jerusalem before the passeover, to purifie themselves.

56 Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?

57 Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that if any man knew where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him.

## CHAP. XII.

*1 Jesus excuseth Mary anointing his feet. 9 The people flock to see Lazarus.*

THen Jesus, six dayes before the passeover, came to Bethanie, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sate at the table with him.

3 Then took Mary a pound of ointment, of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

4 Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simons son which should betray him,

5 Why was not this oyntment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poore?

6 This he said not that he cared for the poore, but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.

7 Then said Jesus, Let her alone, against the day of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For the poore always ye have with you: but me ye have not always.

9 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 ¶ But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death,

11 Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

12 ¶ On the next day, much people that were

come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

13 Took branches of palm-trees, and went forth to meet him, & cryed, Hosanna, blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

14 And Jesus, when he had found an young asse, sate thereon, as it is written,

15 Fear not, daughter of Sion, behold thy King cometh, sitting on an asses colt.

16 These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembred they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

18 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? Behold, the world is gone after him.

20 ¶ And there were certain Greeks among them that came up to worship at the feast.

21 The same came therefore to Philip *which was* of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus.

22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again, Andrew and Philip told Jesus.

23 ¶ And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.

24 Verily verily I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

25 He that loveth his life, shall lose it: and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternall.

26 If any man serve me, let him follow me, and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour.

27 Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this houre: but for this cause came I unto this houre.

28 Father, glorifie thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, *saying*, I have both glorified it, and will glorifie it again.

29 The people therefore that stood by, and heard

it, said that it thundred: others said, an angel spake to him.

30 Jesus answered, and said. This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the judgement of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

32 And I, if I bee lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.

(This he said, signifying what death he should die.)

34 The people answered him, We have heard out of the law, that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lift up? Who is this Son of man?

35 Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you: walk while ye have the light, lest darknesse come upon you: for he that walketh in darknesse, knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While ye have light, beleeve in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus and departed, & did hide himself from them.

37 ¶ But though hee had done so many miracles before them, yet they beleeved not on him:

38 That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath beleeved our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?

39 Therefore they could not beleeve, because that Esaias said again,

40 He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor understand with *their* heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.

41 These things said Esaias, when he saw his glorie, and spake of him.

42 ¶ Nevertheless, among the chief rulers also many beleeved on him, but because of the Pharisees they did not confesse *him*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue.

43 For they loved the praise of men more then the praise of God.

44 ¶ Jesus cried, and said, Hee that beleeveth on me, beleeveth not on me, but on him that sent me.

45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

46 I am come a light into the world, that whosoever beleeveth on me, should not abide in darkne

47 And if any man heare my words, and beleeve not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.

48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in ỹ last day.

49 For I have not spoken of my self, but the Father which sent me, hee gave me a commandment what I should say, and what I should speak.

50 And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

## CHAP. XIII.

*1 Jesus washeth his disciples feet: 14 exhorteth them to humilitie and charitie.*

NOw before the feast of the Passover, when Iesus knew that his houre was come, that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

2 And supper being ended (the devil having now put into the heart of Iudas Iscariot, Simons son, to betray him)

3 Iesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God.

4 He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments, and took a towell and girded himself.

5 After that, he poureth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples feet, & to wipe them with the towell wherewith hee was girded.

6 Then cometh hee to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet?

7 Iesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now: but thou shalt know hereafter.

8 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.

9 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head.

10 Iesus saith to him, He that is washed, needeth not, save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all.

11 For he knew who should betray him, therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

12 So after hee had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again hee said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you?

13 Ye call me Master, and Lord: and ye say well; for so I am.

14 If I then your Lord and Master have washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one anothers feet.

15 For I have given you an example, that yee should do as I have done to you.

16 Verily verily I say unto you, The servant is not greater then his Lord: neither hee that is sent, greater then he that sent him.

17 If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

18 ¶ I speak not of you all, I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture might be fulfilled, Hee that eateth bread with mee, hath lift up his heal against me.

19 Now I tell you before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye may believe that I am he.

20 Verily verily I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send, receiveth me, and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

21 When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

23 Now there was leaning on Jesus bosome, one of his disciples whom Jesus loved.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake.

25 He then lying on Jesus breast, saith unto him, Lord, who is it?

26 Jesus answered, He it is to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And when hee had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon.

27 And after the sop, Satan entred into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly.

28 Now no man at the Table knew for what intent he spake this unto him.

29 For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy those things that we have need of against the feast: or that he should give something to the poore.

30 He

30 Hee then having received the sop, went immediately out: and it was night.

31 ¶ Therefore when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorifie him in himself, & shal straight way glorifie him.

33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me, and as I said unto the Iews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say to you.

34 A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another, as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.

35 By this shall all men know that yee are my Disciples, if ye have love one to another.

36 ¶ Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Iesus answered him, Whither I go thou canst not follow me now: but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

37 Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy sake.

38 Iesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily verily I say unto thee, the cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

## CHAP. XIIII.

1 *Christ comforteth his Disciples: 6 professeth himself the way, truth, life, and one with the Father.*

LEt not your heart be troubled: ye beleeve in God, beleeve also in me.

2 In my Fathers house are many mansions, if it were not so, I would have told you: I go to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto my self, that where I am, there ye may be also.

4 And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas saith unto him, Lord, wee know not whither thou goest: and how can wee know the way?

6 Iesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by mee.

7 If yee had known mee, yee should have known my Father also: and from henceforth yee know him, and have seen him.

8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us.

9 Iesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? He that hath seen me, hath seen the Father, and how saiest thou then, Shew us the Father?

10 Beleevest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I speak unto you, I speak not of my self: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doth the works.

11 Beleeve me that I *am* in the Father, and the Father in me: or else beleeve me for the very works sake.

12 Verily verily I say unto you, He that beleeveth on me, the works that I do, shall hee do also, and greater works than these shall hee do, because I go unto my Father.

13 And whatsoever yee shall ask in my Name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.

14 If ye shall ask any thing in my Name, I will doe *it*.

15 ¶ If ye love me, keep my commandments.

16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that hee may abide with you for ever.

17 *Even* the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him, for hee dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

18 I will not leave you comfortlesse, I will come to you.

19 Yet a little *while*, and the world seeth me no more: but yee see me: because I live, ye shall live also.

20 At that day yee shall know, that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 Hee that hath my commandements, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest my self to him.

22 Judas (not Iscariot) Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy self unto us, and not unto the world?

23 Iesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will

will love him, and wee will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

24 He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings: and the word which you hear, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent mee.

25 These things have I spoken unto you being yet present with you.

26 But the Comforter *which is* the holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, hee shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you, not as the world giveth, give I unto you: let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I goe away, and come again unto you. If yee loved mee, ye would rejoyce, because I said, I goe unto the Father, for my Father is greater then I.

29 And now I have told you before it come to passe, that when it is come to passe, ye might believe.

30 Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh & hath nothing in me.

31 But that the world may know that I love the Father, and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do: arise, let us go hence.

## CHAP. XV.

*1 The consolation and mutuall love between Christ and his members, under the parable of the vine.*

I Am the true vine, and my Father is the husband-man.

2 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

3 Now yee are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of it self, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am the vine, yee are the branches: hee that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

7 If ye abide in me, & my words abide in you, ye shall

shal ask what ye will, & it shal be done unto you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified: that ye beare much fruit, so shall ye be my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love.

10 If ye keep my Commandments, ye shall abide in my love: even as I have kept my Fathers commandments, and abide in his love.

11 These things have I spoken unto you that my joy might remaine in you, and that your joy might be full.

12 This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you.

13 Greater love hath no man then this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.

14 Yee are my friends, if yee do whatsoever I command you.

15 Henceforth I call you not servants, for the servant knoweth not what his lord doth, but I have called you friends: for all things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you.

16 Yee have not chosen mee, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that you should goe and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever yee shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.

17 These things I command you, that ye love one another.

18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you.

19 If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

20 Remember the word that I said unto you. The servant is not greater then the lord: if they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you: if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also.

21 But all these things will they do unto you for my names sake, because they know not him that sent me.

22 If I had not come, and spoken unto them, they had not had sinne, but now they have no cloke for their sinne.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done among them the workes

none other man did; they had not had sin: but now have they both seen, and hated both mee and my Father.

25 But *this commeth to passe*, that the word might bee fulfilled that is written in their Law, They hated me without a cause.

26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, hee shall testifie of me.

27 And yee also shall bear witnesse, because yee have been with me from the beginning.

## CHAP. XVI.

*1 Christ comforteth his Disciples against tribulation. 23 Prayers in Christs Name acceptable to the Father.*

THese things have I spoken unto you, that yee should not be offended.

2 They shall put you out of the Synagogues: yea the time cometh that whosoever killeth you will think that he doth God service.

3 And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me.

4 But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now I go my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

7 Nevertheless, I tell you the truth, it is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you: but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

8 And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousnesse, and of judgement.

9 Of sin because they beleeve not on me.

10 Of righteousnesse, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more.

11 Of judgement, because the prince of this world is judged.

12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

13 Howbeit when he the spirit of truth is come, he will guide you in all truth: for he shall not speak

of

of himself, but whatsoever he shall hear that shall he speak, and he will shew you things to come.

14 He shall glorifie me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

16 A little *while* and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father.

17 Then said *some* of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little *while* and ye shall not see me: and again, A little *while* and ye shall see me: and because I go to the Father.

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little *while*? we cannot tell what he saith.

19 Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among your selves of that I said, A little *while* and ye shall not see me: and again, A little *while* and ye shall see me?

20 Verily verily I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoyce: And ye shall be sorrowfull, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

21 A woman when she *is* in travell, hath sorrow, because her houre is come: but assoon as she is delivered of the childe, she remembreth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is borne into the world.

22 And ye now therefore have sorrow, but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoyce, and your joy no man taketh from you.

23 And in that day ye shall aske me nothing. Verily verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you.

24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my Name: ask and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.

25 These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs: the time cometh when I shal no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father.

26 At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you:

27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.

28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

29 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb.

30 Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God.

31 Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe?

32 Behold the houre cometh, yea is now come, that ye shall bee scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me.

33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace, in the world ye shal have tribulation: but bee of good cheer, I have overcome the world.

## CHAP. XVII.

*Christ prayeth to his Father to glorifie him, & preserve his apostles, 11 in unitie, 17 and truth.*

THese words spake Iesus and lift up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the houre is come: glorifie thy Son, that thy Son also may glorifie thee.

2 As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that bee should give eternall life to as many as thou hast given him.

3 And this is life eternall, that they may know thee the only true God, and Iesus Christ whom thou hast sent.

4 I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.

5 And now, O Father, glorifie thou mee with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

6 I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest mee out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them mee, and they have kept thy word.

7 Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me, are of thee.

8 For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me, and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.

9 I pray for them, I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given mee, for they are thine,

10 And

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them.

11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are.

12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition: that the Scripture might be fulfilled.

13 And now come I to thee, and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

14 I have given them thy word, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil.

16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them through thy truth, thy word is truth.

18 As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

19 And for their sakes I sanctifie my self, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

20 Neither pray I for those alone, but for them also which shall beleeve on me through their word.

21 That they all may be one, as thou Father art in me, & I in thee, y they also may be one in us: that the world may beleeve that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory which thou gavest me, I have given them: that they may be one, even as we are one.

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved mee.

24 Father, I will that they also whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am, that they may behold my glory which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before y foundation of the world.

25 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee, but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent mee,

26 And I have declared unto them thy Name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loued me, may be in them, and I in them.

## CHAP. XVIII.

1 *Iudas betrayeth Iesus.* 8 *the officers fall to the ground.* 12 *Iesus is taken, and led unto Annas and Caiaphas.*

WHen Iesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples ouer the brooke Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred and his disciples.

2 And Iudas also which betrayed him knew the place: for Iesus oft-times resorted thither with his disciples.

3 Iudas then having receiued a band of men, and officers from the chiefe Priests and Pharisees, commeth thither with lanternes & torches & weapons.

4 Iesus therefore knowing all things that should come upon him, went out and said unto them, Whom seek ye?

5 They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus saith unto them, I am *he*. And Iudas also which betrayed him, stood with them.

6 Assoon then as he had said unto them, I am *he*, they went backward and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked he them again, Whom seek yee? And they said, Iesus of Nazareth.

8 Iesus answered, I have told you that I am *he*: if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way.

9 That the saying might be fulfilled which he spake, Of them which thou gauest me, haue I lost none.

10 Then Simon Peter having a sword, drew it, and smote the high Priests seruant, and cut off his right eare: the seruants name was Malchus.

11 Then said Iesus unto Peter, Put up thy sword into the sheath: the cup which my Father hath giuen me, shall I not drink it?

12 Then the band and the captaine and officers of the Iewes took Iesus, and bound him,

13 And led him away to Annas first: (for he was father in law to Caiaphas) which was the high priest that same year.

14 Now Caiaphas was hee which gaue counsell to the Iewes, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

15 ¶ And

15 ¶ And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disciple. That disciple was known unto the high Priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high Priest.

16 But Peter stood at the doore without. Then went out that other disciple which was known unto the high Priest, and spake unto her that kept the doore, and brought in Peter.

17 Then saith the damsell that kept the doore, unto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He saith, I am not.

18 And the servants and officers stood there, who had made a fire of coales, (for it was cold) and they warmed themselves: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himselfe.

19 ¶ The high Priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world: I ever taught in the Synagogue, and in the Temple whither the Jews always resort, and in secret have I said nothing.

21 Why askest thou me? Ask them which heard me, what I have said unto them: behold, they know what I said.

22 And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by, strooke Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high Priest so?

23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, beare witnesse of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?

24 Now Annas had sent him bound unto Caiaphas the high Priest.

25 And Simon Peter stood and warmed himself. They said therefore unto him, Art not thou also one of his disciples? he denied it, and said, I am not.

26 One of the servants of the high Priest, (being his kinsman whose eare Peter cut off) saith, did not I see thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied again, and immediatly the cock crew.

28 ¶ Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas unto the hall of judgement: And it was early, and they themselves went not into the judgement hall, lest they should be defiled: but that they might eat the passeover.

29 Pilate then went out unto them, and said,

What accusation bring you against this man?

30 They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactour, we would not have delivered him up unto thee.

31 Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him, and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him, It is not lawfull for us to put any man to death.

32 That the saying of Jesus might bee fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die.

33 Then Pilate entred into the judgement hall again and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews?

34 Jesus answered him, Saiest thou this thing of thy self, or did others tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? thine own nation and the chief Priests have delivered thee unto me. What hast thou done?

36 Jesus answered, My kingdome is not of this world: if my kingdome were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not bee delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou King then? Jesus answered, Thou saiest that I am a King. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth, heareth my voice.

38 Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I finde in him no fault at all.

39 But yee have a custome, that I should release unto you one at the Passeover: will yee therefore that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

40 Then cried they all again, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

## CHAP. XIX.

1 *Christ is scourged, crowned with thorns, and beaten,* 16 *Delivered to be crucified.*

THen Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged him.

2 And the souldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,

3 And said, Hail King of the Iewes: and they smote him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I finde no fault in him.

5 Then came Iesus forth, wearing the crowne of thorns and the purple robe. And *Pilate* saith unto them, Behold the man.

6 When the chief Priests therefore and officers saw him, they cryed out saying, Crucifie *him*, crucifie *him*. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucifie *him*; for I finde no fault in him.

7 The Iewes answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid;

9 And went again into the judgement-hall, and saith unto Iesus, Whence art thou? But Iesus gave him no answer.

10 Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? Knowest thou not that I have power to crucifie thee, and have power to release thee?

11 Iesus answered, Thou couldest have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore hee that delivered me unto thee, hath the greater sin.

12 And from thence forth Pilate sought to release him: but the Iewes cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Cesars friend: whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Cesar.

13 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Iesus forth, & sate down in the judgement-seat in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the Passeover, and about the sixt houre: and hee saith unto the Iewes, Behold your King.

15 But they cried out, Away with *him*, away with *him*, crucifie him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucifie your King? The chief Priests answered, We have no king but Cesar.

16 Then delivered hee him therefore unto them to bee crucified. And they took Iesus, and led him away.

17 And he bearing his crosse, went forth into a place

called the place of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha:

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWES.

20 This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latine.

21 Then said the chief Priests of the Jews to Pilate, write not, The king of the Jews; but that he said, I am King of the Jews.

22 Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.

23 Then the souldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, (and made four parts, to every souldier a part) and also his coat: Now the coat was without seame, woven from the top throughout.

24 They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rent it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the Scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the souldiers did.

25 ¶ Now there stood by the crosse of Jesus, his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary the wife of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.

26 When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold thy son!

27 Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother! And from that houre that disciple tooke her unto his owne home.

28 ¶ After this Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

29 Now there was set a vessell full of vinegar: and they filled a spunge with vinegar, and put it upon hisop, and put it to his mouth.

30 When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: And he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

31 The

31 The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remaine upon the crosse on the Sabbath-day (for that Sabbath-day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broke, & that they might be taken away.

32 Then came the Souldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him.

33 But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs.

34 But one of the Souldiers with a speare pierced his side: and forth-with came there out blood and water.

35 And he that saw it, bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that hee saith true, that ye might believe.

36 For these things were done, that the Scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken.

37 And againe another Scripture saith, They shall looke on him whom they pierced.

38 ¶ And after this, Joseph of Arimathea (being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for feare of the Jews) besought Pilate that hee might take away the body of Jesus: and Pilate gave him leave. He came therefore and tooke the body of Jesus.

39 And there came also Nicodemus (which at the first came to Jesus by night) and brought a mixture of myrrhe and aloes, about an hundred pound weight.

40 Then tooke they the bodie of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

41 Now in the place where hee was crucified, there was a garden: and in the garden a new Sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.

42 There laid they Jesus therefore, because of the Jewes preparation day: For the Sepulchre was nigh at hand.

## CHAP. XX.

1 *Mary cometh to the Sepulchre.* 3 *So do Peter and Iohn.* 11 *Iesus appeareth to Mary Magdalene.*

THe first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the Sepulchre.

2 Then she runneth and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the Sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him.

3 Peter therefore went forth and that other disciple, and came to the Sepulchre.

4 So they ran both together: and the other disciple did out-run Peter, and came first to the Sepulchre.

5 And hee stooping down and looking in, saw the linnen clothes lying; yet went hee not in.

6 Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the Sepulchre, and seeth the linnen clothes lie:

7 And the napkin that was about his head not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it selfe.

8 Then went in also that other disciple which came first to the Sepulchre, and hee saw, and beleeved.

9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, that hee must rise again from the dead.

10 Then the disciples went away againe unto their owne home.

11 ¶ But Mary stood without at the Sepulchre, weeping: and as she wept, she stooped downe and looked into the Sepulchre:

12 And seeth two angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the bodie of Jesus had lyen.

13 And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

14 And when she had thus said, she turned her selfe backe, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She supposing him to be the Gardiner, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Mary. Shee turned her selfe, and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not (for I am not

not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father and to my God and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seene the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

19 ¶ Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the weeke, when the doores were shut where the disciples were assembled for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

20 And when hee had so said, hee shewed unto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Iesus to them again, Peace be unto you: as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

22 And when he had said his, hee breathed on them and saith unto them, Receive yee the holy Ghost.

23 Whose soever sins yee remit, they are remitted unto them: and whose soever sins yee retaine, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord: But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nailes, and put my finger into the print of the nailes, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not beleeve.

26 ¶ And after eight dayes again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. Then came Iesus, the doores being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you.

27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands: and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side: and bee not faithlesse, but beleeving.

28 And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God.

29 Iesus saith unto him, Thomas because thou hast seene me thou hast beleeved: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have beleeved.

30 ¶ And many other signes truly did Iesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke.

31 But these are written, that ye might beleeve

that Jesus is the Christ the Son of God: and that
Beleeving, ye might have life through his Name.

## CHAP. XXI.

*2 Christ appeareth to his disciples, being a fishing*
*12 He dineth with them.*

AFter these things, Jesus shewed himself again
to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and
on this wise shewed he *himselfe*.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Tho-
mas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in
Galilee, and *the sons* of Zebedee, and two other
of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter saith unto them, I goe a fishing.
They say unto him, We also go with thee. They
went forth and entred into a ship immediatly:
and that night they caught nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Jesus
stood on the shore, but the disciples knew not
that it was Jesus.

5 Then Jesus saith unto them, Children, have
ye any meat? They answered him, No?

6 And hee said unto them, Cast the net on the
right side of the ship, and yee shall finde. They
cast therefore, and now they were not able to
draw it for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved,
saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Si-
mon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt *his*
fishers-coat *unto him*, (for he was naked) and did
cast himself into the sea.

8 And the other disciples come in a little ship
(for they were not far from land, but as it were
two hundred cubits) dragging the net with fishes.

9 As soon then as they were come to land, they
saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon,
and bread.

10 Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which
ye have now caught.

11 Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to
land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and
three: and for all there were so many, *yet* was
not the net broken.

12 Jesus saith unto them, Come *and* dine. And
none of the disciples durst ask him, who art thou?
knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Jesus then cometh, and taketh bread, and
giveth

gaveth them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs.

16 He saith to him again the second time, Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

17 He said unto him the third time, Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved, because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things, thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

18 Verily, verily I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thy self, & walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, & another shall gird thee, and carry *thee* whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.

20 Then Peter turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved, following: which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?

21 Peter seeing him, saith to Jesus, Lord, and what shall this man do?

22 Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee? follow thou me.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die; but if I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee?

24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things; and we know that his testimonie is true.

25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world it self could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

# ¶ The Acts of the Apostles.

## CHAP. I.

*A repetition of part of Christs historie before and after his passion. 9 Of his ascension.*

THE former Treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to doe and teach.

2 Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the holy Ghost had given commandments unto the Apostles, whom he had chosen.

3 To whom also he shewed himselfe alive after his passion, by many infallible proofes, being seene of them fourty dayes, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdome of God.

4 And being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, *saith he*, ye have heard of me.

5 For John truly baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost, not many dayes hence.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying Lord, wilt thou at this time restore againe the kingdome to Israel?

7 And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his owne power.

8 But ye shall receive power after that the holy Ghost is come upon you, and yee shall be witnesses unto mee, both in Jerusalem and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

9 And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight.

10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparell,

11 Which also said, Yee men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so

come

come in like manner as ye have seene him go into heaven

12 Then returned they unto Jerusalem, from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a Sabbath dayes journey.

13 And when they were come in, they went up into an upper room where abode both Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James *the son* of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas *the brother* of James.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women and Marie the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those dayes Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of the names together were about an hundred and twentie.)

16 Men and brethren, this Scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that tooke Jesus.

17 For he was numbred with us, and had obtained part of this ministerie.

18 Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquitie: and falling head long, he burst asunder in the midst, & all his bowels gushed out.

19 And it was knowne unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem: insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, the field of bloud.

20 For it is written in the book of Psalmes. Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: and his Bishopricke let another take.

21 Wherefore of these men which have companied with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,

22 Beginning from the baptisme of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one bee ordained to bee a witnesse with us of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed and said, Thou Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether by these two thou hast chosen.

25 That hee may take part of this Ministery and Apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that hee might goe to his owne place.
26 And they gave forth their lots, and the lot fell upon Matthias: and hee was numbred with the eleven Apostles.

## CHAP. II.

*1 The Apostles filleth with the holy Ghost speake divers languages.*

AND when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.
2 And suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty winde: and it filled all the house where they were sitting.
3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sate upon each of them.
4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.
5 And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven.
6 Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded: because that every man heard them speake in his owne language.
7 And they were all amazed and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speake Galileans?
8 And how hear wee every man in our owne tongue, wherein we were borne?
9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus and Asia.
10 Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya, about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and Proselytes.
11 Cretes and Arabians, wee do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderfull works of God.
12 And they were all amazed, & were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?
13 Others mocking, said, These men are full of new wine.
14 ¶ But Peter standing up with the eleven, lift up his voice, and said unto them. Ye men of Jury, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this knowne unto you, and hearken to my words.

15 For

15 For these are not drunken, as yee suppose, seeing it is but the third houre of the day.

16 But this is that which was spoken by the Prophet Joel,

17 And it shall come to passe in the last dayes, (saith God) I will poure out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesie, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dreame dreames.

18 And on my servants, and on my handmaidens, I will poure out in those dayes of my Spirit, and they shall prophesie:

19 And I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signes in the earth beneath, bloud, and fire, and vapour of smoak.

20 The Sun shall be turned into darknesse, and the Moone into bloud, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.

21 And it shal come to passe, that whosoever shall call on the Name of the Lord, shall be saved.

22 Ye men of Israel hear these words: Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles, wonders, and signes, which God did by him in the midst of you, as yee your selves also know:

23 Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel & foreknowledge of God, ye having taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slaine:

24 Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the paines of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.

25 For David speaketh concerning him, I foresaw the Lord always before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved.

26 Therefore did mine heart rejoyce, and my tongue was glad: moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope:

27 Because thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy One to see corruption.

28 Thou hast made knowne to me the wayes of life: thou shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance.

29 Men & brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the Patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, & his Sepulchre is with us unto this day.

30 Therefore being a Prophet, and knowing that God had sworne with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loines, according to the flesh hee would raise up Christ to sit on his Throne:

31 He seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.

32 This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof wee all are witnesses.

33 Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this which ye now see and heare.

34 For David is not ascended into the heavens; but he saith himselfe, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

35 Untill I make thy foes thy footstoole.

36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

37 ¶ Now when they heard *this*, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter, and to the rest of the Apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we doe?

38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and bee baptized every one of you in the Name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the holy Ghost.

39 For the promise is unto you and to your children, and to all *that are* afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.

40 And with many other words did hee testifie and exhort, saying, Save your selves from this untoward generation.

41 ¶ Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added *unto them* about three thousand soules.

42 And they continued stedfastly in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread and in prayers.

43 And fear came upon every soule: and many wonders and signes were done by the Apostles.

44 And all that beleeved were together, and had all things common.

45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.

46 And

46 And they continuing daily with one accord in the Temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladnesse, and singlenesse of heart,

47 Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the Church daily, such as should be saved.

## CHAP. III.

*1 Peter with Iohn, restore a lame man to his feet.*
*12 How the cure was wrought.*

NOw Peter and Iohn went up together into the Temple at the houre of prayer, *being* the ninth *houre*.

2 And a certaine man lame from his mothers wombe was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the Temple, which is called Beautifull, to aske almes of them that entred into the Temple.

3 Who seeing Peter and Iohn about to go into the Temple, asked an almes.

4 And Peter fastening his eyes upon him with Iohn said, Looke on us.

5 And hee gave heed unto them, expecting to receive something of them.

6 Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none, but such as I have give I thee: In the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, rise up and walke.

7 And he took him by the right hand and lift him up: and immediatly his feet and ankle bones received strength.

8 And he leaping up, stood and walked and entred with them into the Temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God.

9 And all the people saw him walking and praising God.

10 And they knew that it was he which sate for almes at the Beautifull gate of the Temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.

11 And as the lame man which was healed held Peter and Iohn, all the people ran together unto them in the porch that is called Solomons, greatly wondring.

12 ¶ And when Peter saw *it*, hee answered unto the people, ye men of Israel why marvell ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on us as though by our own power or holinesse we had made this man to walke?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his Son Jesus; whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him goe.

14 But ye denied the holy One, and the Just: and desired a murderer to be granted unto you.

15 And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead, whereof wee are witnesses.

16 And his Name, through Faith in his Name, hath made this man strong, whom yee see and know: yea, the Faith which is by him, hath given him this perfect soundnesse in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I wot that through ignorance ye did it: as did also your rulers.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

19 Repent ye therefore, and bee converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.

20 And hee shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you.

21 Whom the heaven must receive, until the times of restitution of all things which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.

22 For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you, of your brethren, like unto me: him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

23 And it shall come to passe, that every soule which will not heare that Prophet, shall bee destroyed from among the people.

24 Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken have likewise foretold of these dayes.

25 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed.

26 Unto you first, God having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to blesse you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

CHAP.

*The rulers offended with Peters sermon, 3 imprison him and John. 7 They examine them.*

AND as they spake unto the people, the Priests and the captaine of the Temple, and the Sadduces came upon them,

2 Being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them and put them in hold unto the next day, for it was now eventide.

4 Howbeit many of them which heard the word beleeved: and the number of the men was about five thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to passe on the morrow, that their Rulers, and Elders, and Scribes,

6 And Annas the high Priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high Priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem.

7 And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, By what power, or by what name have ye done this?

8 Then Peter filled with the holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye Rulers of the people and Elders of Israel,

9 If we this day bee examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what meanes hee is made whole.

10 Bee it knowne unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the Name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

11 This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

12 Neither is there salvation in any other: For there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved.

13 ¶ Now when they saw the boldnesse of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled: and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

14 And beholding the man which was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

15 But

17 But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the Councel, they conferred among themselves,

16 Saying, What shall we do to these men? For that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them, *it* manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot denie *it*.

17 But that it spread no further among the people, let us straitly threaten them, that they speake henceforth to no man in this Name.

18 And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all nor teach in the name of Iesus.

19 But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to hearken unto you more then unto God, judge ye.

20 For we cannot but speake the things which we have seen and heard.

21 So when they had further threatned them, they let them go, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people: For all men glorified God for that which was done.

22 For the man was about fourtie years old, on whom this miracle of healing was shewed.

23 ¶ And being let goe, they went to their own company, and reported all that the chiefe Priests and Elders had said unto them.

24 And when they heard that, they lift up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou art God, which hast made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all that in them *is*:

25 Who by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vaine things?

26 The Kings of the earth stood up, and the Rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For of a truth, against thy holy Childe Jesus whom thou hast anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel, were gathered together,

28 For to doe whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done.

29 And now Lord, behold their threatnings: and grant unto thy servants that with all boldnesse they may speake thy word,

30 By stretching forth thine hand to heale: and

that

that signes and wonders may bee done by the Name of thy holy Childe Jesus.

31 ¶ And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldnesse.

32 And ¶ multitude of them that believed were of one heart, and of one soul: neither said any of them, that ought of the things which he possessed, was his own; but they had all things common.

33 And with great power gave the Apostles witnesse of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and great grace was upon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: For as many as were possessours of lands or houses, sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold,

35 And laid them downe at the Apostles feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need.

36 And Joses, who by the Apostles was surnamed Barnabas (which is being interpreted, The son of consolation) a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus.

37 Having lands sold it, and brought the money and laid it at the Apostles feet.

## CHAP. V.

1. 10 *Ananias and Sapphira fall downe dead.*
12 *The Apostles worke many miracles.*

But a certaine man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,

2 And kept back *part* of the price, his wife also being privie to it, and brought a certaine part, and laid *it* at the Apostles feet.

3 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the holy Ghost, and to keep backe *part* of the price of the land?

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine owne? and after it was sold, was it not in thine owne power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words, fell down, and gave up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried *him*.

7 And

8 And it was about the space of three houres after when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered unto her, Tell me, whether ye sold the land for so much. And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? Behold, the feet of them that have buried thy husband are at the doore, and shall carry thee out.

10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yeelded up the ghost. And the young men came in and found her dead: and carrying her forth, buried her by her husband.

11 And great fear came on all the Church, and upon as many as heard these things.

12 ¶ And by the hands of the Apostles were many signes and wonders wrought among the people: (And they were all with one accord in Solomons porch.

13 And of the rest durst no man joyne himself to them: but the people magnified them.

14 And beleevers were the more added to the Lord multitudes both of men and women)

15 Insomuch that they brought forth the sicke into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by, might overshadow some of them.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem bringing sicke folkes, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed every one.

17 ¶ Then the high Priest rose up, and all they that were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadducees) and were filled with indignation.

18 And laid their hands on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 But the Angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth, & said,

20 Go stand and speak in the Temple to the people all the words of this life.

21 And when they heard that, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, and taught. But the high Priest came, and they that were with him, and called the Councel together, and all the Senate of the children of Israel, and sent to

to the prison to have them brought.

22 But when the officers came and found them not in the prison, they returned and told,

23 Saying, The prison truly found we shut with all safety, and the keepers standing without before the doores, but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Now when the high priest, and the captaine of the Temple, and the chiefe priests heard these things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one, and told them, saying, Behold the men whom ye put in prison are standing in the Temple, and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captaine with the officers and brought them without violence: (For they feared the people, lest they should have been stoned.)

27 And when they had brought them, they set *them* before the Councel, and the high priest asked them,

28 Saying, Did not wee straitly command you, that you should not teach in this Name? And behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine and intend to bring this mans blood upon us.

29 ¶ Then Peter & the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather then men.

30 The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand, *to be* a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

32 And wee are his witnesses of these things, and *so is* also the holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him.

33 When they heard *that*, they were cut to the heart, and tooke counsel to slay them.

34 Then stood there up one *in the* Councel, a Pharisee named Gamaliel, a Doctour of Law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles forth a little space,

35 And said unto them, Yemen of Israel, take heed to your selves, what ye intend to do as touching these men.

36 For before these dayes rose up Theudas boasting himself to be some body, to whom a number of men, about foure hundred, joyned *themselves*:

who

who was slaine, and all, as many as obeyed him, were scattered and brought to nought.

37 After this man rose up Judas of Galilee, in the dayes of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he also perished, and all, even as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

38 And now I say unto you, refrain from these men, and let them alone: For if this counsel or this worke be of men, it will come to nought.

39 But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it, lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the Apostles and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speake in the name of Jesus, and let them goe.

41 ¶ And they departed from the presence of the councel, rejoycing that they were counted worthie to suffer shame for his Name.

42 And daily in the Temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

## CHAP. VI.

*1 The Apostles care for the poore, and of preaching the word. 3 Seven men chosen for Deacons.*

1 AND in those dayes, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration.

2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, & serve tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the holy Ghost and wisedome, whom wee may appoint over this businesse.

4 But wee will give our selves continually to prayer, and to the ministery of the word.

5 ¶ And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of Faith and of the holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch;

6 Whom they set before the Apostles: And when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased; and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly;

greatly; and a great company of the priests were obedient to the Faith.

8 And Stephen full of Faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 ¶ Then there arose certain of the Synagogue, which is called *the Synagogue* of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, disputing with Stephen.

10 And they were not able to resist the wisedome, and the Spirit by which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men, which said, We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses, and *against* God.

12 And they stirred up the people, and the Elders, and the Scribes, and came upon *him* and caught him, and brought *him* to the Councel.

13 And set up false witnesses, which said This man ceaseth not to speake blasphemous words against this holy place, and the Law.

14 For we have heard him say, That this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the customes which Moses delivered us.

15 And all that sate in the Councel looking stedfastly on him, saw his face as it had been the face of an Angel.

## CHAP. VII.

1 *Stephen answereth to his accusation.* 51 *He reprehendeth the peoples rebellion and murdering of Christ.*

Then said the high priest, are these things so?

2 And he said Men, brethren, and fathers hearken: The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before hee dwelt in Charran,

3 And said unto him, Get thee out of thy countrey, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when his father was dead, hee removed him into this land wherein yee now dwell.

5 And he gave him none inheritance in it, no not *so much as* to set his foot on: yet he promised that he would give *it* to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when *as yet* he had no child.

6 And God spake on this wise, that his seed

should sojourne in a strange land, and that they should bring them into bondage, and intreat them evil foure hundred yeares.

7 And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage will I judge, said God: And after that shall they come forth, and serve me in this place.

8 And hee gave him the covenant of circumcision: and so *Abraham* begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eight day: and Isaac *begat* Jacob, and Jacob *begat* the twelve Patriarchs.

9 And the Patriarchs moved with envie, sold Joseph into Egypt, but God was with him.

10 And delivered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favour and wisedome in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt: and he made him governour over Egypt and all his house.

11 Now there came a dearth over all the land of Egypt and Canaan, and great affliction: and our fathers found no sustenance.

12 But when Jacob heard that there was corne in Egypt, he sent out our fathers first.

13 And at the second *time* Joseph was made knowne to his brethren, and Joseph's kindred was made known unto Pharaoh.

14 Then sent Joseph, and called his father Jacob to him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteene soules.

15 So Jacob went downe into Egypt, and died, he and our fathers:

16 And were carried over into Sichem, and laid in ¶ Sepulchre that Abraham bought for a sum of money, of the sons of Emor, *the father* of Sichem.

17 But when the time of the promise grew nigh, which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt.

18 Till another king arose which knew not Joseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kindred, & vil intreated our fathers, so ¶ they cast out their young children, to the end they might not live.

20 In which time Moses was borne, and was exceeding fair, and nourished up in his father's house three moneths:

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaohs daughter took him up, and nourished him for her own son.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisedome

of

of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in deeds.

23 And when hee was full fourtie years old, it came into his heart to visite his brethren, the children of Israel.

24 And seeing one of them suffer wrong, he defended *him*, and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian:

25 For he supposed his brethren would have understood, how that God by his hand would deliver them: but they understood not.

26 And the next day hee shewed himselfe unto them, as they strove, and would have set them at one againe, saying, Sirs, yee are brethren, why do ye wrong one to another?

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge over us?

28 Wilt thou kill me, as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday?

29 Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where hee begat two sons.

30 And when fourty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wildernesse of mount Sina, an Angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

31 When Moses *saw it*, he wondred at the sight: and as he drew near to behold *it*, the voice of the Lord came unto him, *saying*,

32 I *am* the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold.

33 Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet: For the place where thou standest, is holy ground.

34 I have seen, I have seen the affliction of my people, *which is* in Egypt, and I have heard their groning, and am come down to deliver them: and now come, I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge? the same did God send to be a ruler and a deliverer by the hands of the Angel which appeared to him in the bush.

36 He brought them out, after that he had shewed wonders and signes in the land of Egypt, and in the red Sea, & in the wildernesse fourty years.

37 This

37 ¶ This is that Moses, which said unto the children of Israel, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren like unto me: him shall ye hear.

38 This is he that was in the Church in the wildernesse, with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sinai, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust *him* from them, and in their hearts turned backe again into Egypt,

40 Saying unto Aaron, Make us gods to go before us: For *as for* this Moses, which brought us out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him.

41 And they made a calfe in those dayes, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoyced in the works of their own hands.

42 Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven, as it is written in the book of the prophets, O yee house of Israel have ye offered to me slain beasts and sacrifices, by the space of fourty yeares, in the wildernesse?

43 Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them: and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witnesse in the wildernesse, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, that he should make it according to the fashion that hee had seen.

45 Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drave out before the face of our fathers unto the dayes of David:

46 Who found favour before God, and desired to finde a tabernacle for the God of Jacob.

47 But Solomon built him an house.

48 Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands: as saith the Prophet,

49 Heaven *is* my throne, and earth *is* my footstool: what house will yee build mee, saith the Lord? Or what *is* the place of my rest?

50 Hath not my hand made all these things?

51 ¶ Yee stiffe-necked, and uncircumcised in heart and eares, yee doe alwayes resist the holy

Ghost:

Ghost; as your fathers did, so do ye.

52 Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? And they have slain them which shewed before of the comming of the just One, of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers:

53 Who have received the law by the disposition of Angels, and have not kept it.

54 ¶ When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God,

56 And said, Behold I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.

57 Then they cryed out with a loud voice, and stopped their eares, and ran upon him with one accord.

58 And cast him out of the citie, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young mans feet, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus receive my spirit.

60 And hee kneeled downe, and cryed with a loud voice, Lord lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, hee fell asleep.

## CHAP. VIII

1 *The Church is planted in Samaria.*

AND Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the Church *which was* at Jerusalem: and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the Apostles.

2 And devout men carried Stephen to his burial, and made great lamentation over him.

3 As for Saul, he made havoke of the church, entring into every house, and haling men and women committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went every where preaching the Word.

5 Then Philip went downe to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them.

6 And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which hee did.

7 For uncleane spirits, crying with loud voice
came

came out of many that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed.

8 And there was great joy in that city.

9 But there was a certaine man called Simon, which before time in the same city used sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one:

10 To whom they all gave heed from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But when they beleeved Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdome of God, and the Name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women.

13 Then Simon himselfe beleeved also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip: and wondred, beholding the miracles and signs which were done.

14 Now when the Apostles *which were* at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John.

15 Who when they were come downe prayed for them that they might receive the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet hee was fallen upon none of them, only they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Jesus.)

17 Then laid they *their* hands on them, and they received the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the Apostles hands the holy Ghost was given, he offered them money,

19 Saying, Give mee also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the holy Ghost.

20 But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee:

23 For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitternesse,

bitterneſſe, and in the bond of iniquitie.

24 Then anſwered Simon, and ſaid, Pray ye for me to the Lord for me, that none of theſe things which ye have ſpoken come upon me.

25 And they when they had teſtified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jeruſalem, and preached the goſpel in many villages of the Samaritans.

26 And the Angel of the Lord ſpake unto Philip ſaying, Ariſe, and goe toward the South, unto the way that goeth downe from Jeruſalem unto Gaza, which is deſert.

27 And he aroſe and went: and behold, a man of Ethiopia, an Eunuch of great authoritie under Candace Queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treaſure, and had come to Jeruſalem for to worſhip,

28 Was returning, and ſitting in his chariot, read Eſaias the Prophet.

29 Then the Spirit ſaid unto Philip, Go neare, and joyne thy ſelf to this chariot.

30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the Prophet Eſaias, and ſaid, Underſtandeſt thou what thou readeſt?

31 And he ſaid, How can I, except ſome man ſhould guide me? And he deſired Philip that he would come up, and ſit with him.

32 The place of the Scripture which hee read, was this, He was led as a ſheep to the ſlaughter: and like a lambe dumbe before the ſhearer: ſo opened hee not his mouth:

33 In his humiliation his judgement was taken away, and who ſhall declare his generation? For his life is taken from the earth.

34 And the Eunuch anſwered Philip and ſaid, I pray thee, of whom ſpeaketh the Prophet this? of himſelfe, or of ſome other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the ſame Scripture, and preached unto him Jeſus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the Eunuch ſaid, See here is water, what doth hinder mee to be baptized?

37 And Philip ſaid, If thou believeſt with all thine heart, thou maieſt. And he anſwered & ſaid, I believe that Jeſus Chriſt is the Son of God.

38 And he commanded the chariot to ſtand ſtill:

and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the Eunuch, and he baptized him.

39 And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the Eunuch saw him no more. And hee went on his way rejoycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing through, hee preached in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

## CHAP. IX.

*1 Saul going toward Damascus, 4 is stricken down to the earth.*

AND Saul yet breathing out threatnings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went unto the high priest,

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus, to the Synagogues: that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women, hee might bring them bound unto Jerusalem.

3 And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus: and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven.

4 And he fell to ỹ earth & heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And hee said, Who art thou Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: *It is* hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

6 And he trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord *said* unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.

7 And the men which journeyed with him stood speechlesse, hearing a voice, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth: and when his eies were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.

9 And hee was three dayes without sight, and neither did eat nor drink.

10 ¶ And there was a certain disciple at Damascus named Ananias, & to him said ỹ Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I *am here* Lord.

11 And the Lord *said* unto him, Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Judas for *one* called Saul of Tarsus: for behold, he prayeth:

12 And hath seen in a vision a man named Ana-

nias

nias, comming in, and putting *his* hand on him, that he might receive his sight.

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man how much evil he hath done to thy Saints at Jerusalem:

14 And here he hath authority from the chief priests, to binde all that call on thy Name.

15 But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for hee is a chosen vessel unto mee, to beare my Name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel

16 For I will shew him how great things hee must suffer for my Names sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entred into the house: and putting his hands on him, said, Brother Saul: the Lord (*even* Jesus that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest) hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes, as *it had been* scales, and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

19 And when hee had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain dayes with the disciples *which were* at Damascus.

20 And straight way he preached Christ in the Synagogues that he is the Son of God.

21 But all that heard *him* were amazed, and said, Is not this hee that destroyed them which called on this Name in Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that hee might bring them bound unto the chief priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damascus, proving that this is very Christ.

23 ¶ And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Jews took counsel to kill him.

24 But their laying await was known of Saul: & they watched the gates day & night to kill him.

25 Then the disciples took him by night, and let *him* down by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to joyn himself to the disciples: but they were all afraid of him, and believed not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas took him, and brought *him* to

the Apostles, and declared unto them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus, in the name of Jesus.

28 And he was with them coming in, and going out at Jerusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the Name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians, but they went about to slay him.

30 *Which* when the brethren knew, they brought him down to Cesarea, & sent him forth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the Churches rest throughout all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified: and walking in the feare of the Lord, and in the comfort of the holy Ghost, were multiplied.

32 ¶ And it came to passe as Peter passed throughout all *quarters*, hee came downe also to the Saints which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there hee found a certaine man named Aeneas which had kept his bed eight yeares, and was sicke of the palsie.

34 And Peter said unto him, Aeneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole: Arise, and make thy *bed*. And he arose immediatly.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 ¶ Now there *was* at Joppa a certaine disciple, named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: This *woman* was full of good works, and almes-deeds which she did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes that she was sicke and died: whom when they had washed, they laid *her* in an upper-chamber.

38 And for as much as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring *him* that he would not delay to come to them.

39 Then Peter arose, and went with them: when hee was come, they brought him into the upper-chamber: and all the widows stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled downe and prayed, and turned him to the body, said, Tabitha arise. And she opened her eyes: and when she saw Peter, she sate up.

41 And

41 And hee gave her his hand, and lift her up: and when hee had called the Saints and widowes, presented her alive.

42 And it was knowne throughout all Joppa, and many believed in the Lord.

43 And it came to passe, that he tarried many dayes in Joppa, with one Simon a tanner.

## CHAP. X.

*1 Cornelius sendeth for Peter. 34 Peter preacheth. 44 The holy Ghost falleth on the hearers.*

THere was a certaine man in Cesarea called Cornelius, a Centurion of the band called the Italian *band*:

2 A devout *man*, and *one* that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God alway.

3 He saw in a vision evidently about the ninth houre of the day, an Angel of God comming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looked on him, hee was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And hee said unto him, Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God.

5 And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surename is Peter:

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: hee shall tell thee what thou oughtest to doe.

7 And when the Angel which spake unto Cornelius, was departed, hee called two of his household servants, and a devout Souldier of them that waited on him continually.

8 And when hee had declared all *these* things unto them, he sent them to Joppa.

9 ¶ On the morrow as they went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the city, Peter went up upon the house top to pray about the sixt houre.

10 And he became very hungry, and would have eaten: but while they made ready, he fell into a trance.

11 And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessell descending unto him, as *it had been* a great sheet, knit at the foure corners & let down to the earth.

12 Wherein were all manner of foure-footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and foules of the aire.

13 And there came a voice to him, Rise Peter, kill and eat.

14 But Peter said, Not so Lord: for I have never eaten any thing *that is* common, or unclean.

15 And the voice *spake* unto him again the second time, What God hath cleansed, *that* call not thou common.

16 This was done thrice: and the vessel was received up again into heaven.

17 Now while Peter doubted in himself what this vision which he had seen, should mean: behold the men which were sent from Cornelius, had made enquirie for Simons house, and stood before the gate,

18 And called, and asked whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 ¶ While Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said unto him, Behold, three men seek thee.

20 Arise therefore and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing: for I have sent them.

21 Then Peter went down to the men which were sent unto him from Cornelius, and said, Behold, I am *he* whom ye seek: what *is* the cause wherefore ye are come?

22 And they said, Cornelius the Centurion, a just man and *one* that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by an holy Angel, to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of thee.

23 Then called he them in, & lodged *them*. And on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certain brethren from Joppa accompanied him.

24 And the morrow *after* they entred into Cesarea: and Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and neer friends.

25 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, & fell down at his feet and worshipped *him*.

26 But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up, I my self also am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said unto them, Ye know how that it is an unlawfull thing for a man *that is* a Jew, to keep company, or come unto one of another nation: but God hath shewed me, that I should not call any man common, or unclean.

29 There-

29 Therefore came I *unto you* without gainsaying, as soon as I was sent for. I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me?

30 And Cornelius said, Four dayes ago I was fasting untill this houre, and *at* the ninth houre I prayed in my house: and behold a man stood before me in bright clothing.

31 And said, Cornelius thy prayer is heard, and thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Simon, whose surname is Peter: he is lodged in the house of *one* Simon a tanner, by the sea side, who, when he commeth, shall speak unto thee.

33 Immediatly therefore I sent to thee, and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are wee all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened his mouth and said, Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons:

35 But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousnesse, is accepted with him.

36 The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ, (he is Lord of all)

37 That word (*I say*) ye know which was published throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptisme which John preached:

38 How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost and with power, who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil: for God was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did, both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem, whom they slew, and hanged on a tree.

40 Him God raised up the third day, and shewed him openly,

41 Not to all the people, but unto witnesses chosen before of God *even* to us who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead.

42 And hee commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testifie that it is hee which was ordained of God *to be* the judge of quick and dead.

43 To him give all the prophets witnesse, *that*

through his Name: whosoever believeth in him, shall receive remission of sins.

44 ¶ While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision which believed were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speake with tongues and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water that these should not be baptized, which have received the holy Ghost as well as we?

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain dayes.

## CHAP. XI.

1 *Peter accused for going into the Gentiles:* 4 *maketh his defence,* 18 *which is accepted.*

AND the Apostles and brethren that were in Judea, heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they *that* were of the circumcision contended with him.

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them.

4 But Peter rehearsed *the matter* from the beginning, & expounded it by order unto them, saying,

5 I was in the city of Joppa praying, and in a trance I saw a vision, a certain vessel descend, as it had been a great sheet let downe from heaven by foure corners, and it came even to me.

6 Upon the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered and saw foure-footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, fouls of the aire.

7 And I heard a voice, saying unto me, Arise Peter, slay and eate.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord: For nothing common or unclean hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voice answered mee again from heaven. What God hath cleansed, *that* call not thou common.

10 And this was done three times, and all were drawn up again into heaven.

11 And

11 And behold, immediatly there were three men already come unto the house where I was, sent from Cesarea unto me.

12 And the Spirit bade me go with them nothing doubting. Moreover these six brethren accompanied me, and we entred into the mans house.

13 And he shewed us how he had seen an Angel in his house, which stood and said unto him. Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter:

14 Who shall tell thee words whereby thou, and all thy house shall be saved.

15 And as I began to speak, the holy Ghost fell on them, as on us at the beginning,

16 Then remembred I the word of the Lord, how that he said, John indeed baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost.

17 Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ: what was I that I could withstand God?

18 When they heard these things they held their peace, and glorified God, saying then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

19 ¶ Now they which were scattered abroad upon the persecution that arose about Stephen travelled as far as Phenice, & Cyprus, & Antioch, preaching the word to none, but unto the Jews only:

20 And some of them were men of Cyprus, and Cyrene, which when they were come to Antioch, spake unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them, and a great number believed, and turned unto the Lord.

22 ¶ Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the Church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch.

23 Who when he came, and had seen the grace of God: was glad, and exhorted them all that with purpose of heart, they would cleave unto the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord.

25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul,



26 And

26 And when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to passe, that a whole yeare they assembled themselves with the Church, and taught much people: and the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.

27 ¶ And in these dayes came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch.

28 And there stood up one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit that there should be great dearth throughout all the world, which came to passe in the dayes of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples every man according to his ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren which dwelt in Judea.

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the Elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

## CHAP. XII.

*1 Herod persecuteth the Christians, killeth Iames imprisoneth Peter, who is delivered by an angel.*

NOw about that time Herod the king stretched forth his hands, to vex certain of the Church.

2 And hee killed James the brother of John with the sword.

3 And because hee saw it pleased the Jews, hee proceeded *further* to take Peter also. (Then were the dayes of unleavened bread.)

4 And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of souldiers to keep him, intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison: but prayer was made without ceasing of the Church unto God for him.

6 And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two souldiers, bound with two chains, and the keepers before the door kept the prison.

7 And behold the Angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: & he smote Peter on the side, & raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.

8 And the Angel said unto him, Gird *thy self*, and binde on thy sandals: And so hee did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 And he went out and followed him, and wist

not

not that it was true which was done by the Angel: but thought he saw a vision.

10 When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the city, which opened to them of his own accord: and they went out, and passed on through one street, and forthwith the Angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his Angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and *from* all the expectation of the people of the Jews.

12 And when he had considered *the thing*, he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname was Mark, where many were gathered together praying.

13 And as Peter knocked at the door of the gate, a damsell came to hearken, named Rhoda.

14 And when she knew Peters voice, she opened not the gate for gladnesse, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate.

15 And they said unto her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is his Angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking: and when they had opened *the door* and saw him, they were astonished.

17 But he beckning unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed and went into another place.

18 Now *assoon* as it was day, there was no small stir among the souldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that *they* should be put to death. And he went down from Judea to Cesarea, and *there* abode.

20 ¶ And Herod was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and having made Blastus the kings Chamberlain their friend, desired peace, because

because their countrey were nourished by the kings *countrey*.

21 And upon a set day, Herod arraied in royall apparell, sate upon his throne, and made an oration unto them.

22 And the people gave a shout, *saying*, *It is* the voice of a God, and not of a man.

23 And immediatly the Angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost.

24 ¶ But the word of God grew and multiplied.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled their ministry, and took with them John, whose surname was Mark.

## CHAP. XIII.

*Paul & Barnabas are chosen to go to the Gentiles. Of Sergius Paulus & Elymas the sorcerer.*

NOw there were in the Church that was at Antioch, certain prophets and teachers, as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the Tetrarch, and Saul.

2 As they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent *them* away.

4 ¶ So they being sent forth by the holy Ghost, departed unto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the Synagogues of the Jews: and they had also John to *their* minister.

6 And when they had gone through the Ile unto Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name *was* Barjesus:

7 Which was with the deputy of the countrey, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man, who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to hear the word of God.

8 But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputy from the faith.

9 Then Saul (who also *is called* Paul) filled with the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And

10 And said, O full of all subtilty and all mischief, *thou* childe of the devil, *thou* enemy of all righteousnesse, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right wayes of the Lord?

11 And now behold, the hand of the Lord *is* upon thee, and thou shalt be blinde, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediatly there fell on him a mist and a darknesse, and he went about, seeking some to lead him by the hand.

12 Then the deputy, when he saw what was done, beleeved, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and his company loosed from Paphos, they came to perga in pamphilia: & John departing from them, returned to Jerusalem.

14 ¶ But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sat down.

15 And after the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Ye men *and* brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people say on.

16 Then Paul stood up, and beckning with *his* hand, said, Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, give audience.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with an high arm brought he them out of it.

18 And about the time of fourty years suffered he their manners in the wildernesse.

19 And when hee had destroyed seven nations in the land of Canaan, he divided their land to them by lot.

20 And after that, he gave *unto them* Judges about the space of four hundred and fifty years, until Samuel the prophet.

21 And afterward they desired a king, and God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin by the space of fourty years.

22 And when he had removed him, he raised up unto them David to be their king, to whom also he gave testimony, and said, I have found David the *son* of Jesse, a man after mine owne heart, which shall fulfill all my will.

23 Of this mans seed hath God, according

*his* promise, raised vnto Israel a Saviour Jesus,
24 When John had first preached before his coming the baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel.
25 And as John fulfilled his course, hee said, Whom think ye that I am? I am not hee; but behold, there cometh one after mee, whose shoes of *his* feet I am not worthy to loose.
26 Men *and* brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you feareth God, to you is the word of this salvation sent.
27 For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets, which are read every sabbath-day, they have fulfilled *them* in condemning *him*.
28 And though they found no cause of death in *him* yet desired they Pilate that he should be slain.
29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they took *him* down from the tree, and laid *him* in a sepulchre.
30 But God raised him from the dead:
31 And he was seen many dayes of them which came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses unto the people.
32 And we declare unto you glad tidings how that ¶ promise which was made unto the fathers,
33 God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that hee hath raised up Jesus again, as it is also written in the second Psalme, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee.
34 And *as concerning* that hee raised him up from the dead, *now* no more to return to corruption, hee said on this wise, I will give you the sure mercies of David.
35 Wherefore he saith also in another *Psalme*, Thou shalt not suffer thine holy One to see corruption.
36 For David after he had served his own generation by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption.
37 But *he* whom God raised again, saw no corruption.
38 ¶ Be it known unto you therefore, men *and* brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins:
39 And by him all ¶ believe are justified from

all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moles.

40 Beware therefore lest that come upon you which is spoken of in the prophets,

41 Behold ye despisers, and wonder and perish: for I work a work in your dayes, a work which you shall in no wise beleeve, though a man declare it unto you.

42 And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them the next sabbath.

43 Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews & religious Proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas; who speaking to them, perswaded them to continue in the grace of God.

44 ¶ And the next sabbath day came almost the whole city together to hear the word of God.

45 But when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envie, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.

46 Then Paul & Barnabas waxed bold and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing yee put it from you, and judge your selves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.

47 For so hath the Lord commanded us *saying*, I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest bee for salvation unto the ends of the earth

48 And when the Gentiles heard this they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternall life, beleeved.

49 And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region.

50 But the Jews stirred up the devout and honourable women, and the chief *men* of the city, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts.

51 But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came to Iconium.

52 And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the holy Ghost.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XIIII.

*1 Paul and Barnabas are persecuted. 8 Paul healing a creeple, they are reputed gods. 19 Paul is stoned.*

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Iewes, and so spake that a great multitude, both of the Iewes, and also of the Greeks, beleeved.

2 But the unbeleeving Iewes stirred up the Gentiles, and made their mindes evil affected against the brethren.

3 Long time therefore abode they, speaking boldly in the Lord which gave testimony unto the word of his grace, and granted signes and wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the city was divided: and part held with the Iewes, and part with the Apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Iewes, with their rulers, to use *them* dispightfully, and to stone them

6 They were war of it, and fled unto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Icaonia, and unto the region that lyeth round about:

7 And there they preached the Gospel.

8 ¶ And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a creeple from his mothers womb, who never had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speak: Who stedfastly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed.

10 Said with a lond voice, Stand upright on thy feet: And he leaped and walked.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift up their voices, saying in the speech of Lyconia, The Gods are come down to us in the likenesse of men.

12 And they called Barnabas, Jupiter: and Paul Mercurius: because he was the chief speaker.

13 Then the priest of Jupiter, which was before their city, brought oxen & garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people.

14 *Which* when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard *of*, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out,

15 And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? we also

also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you, that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven and earth and the sea, and all things that are therein.

16 Who in times past, suffered all nations to walke in their owne wayes.

17 Nevertheless he left not himselfe without witnesse, in that he did good, and gave us raine from heaven, and fruitfull seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladnesse.

18 And with these things scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them.

19 ¶ And there came thither certaine Jews from Antioch and Iconium, who perswaded the people, and having stoned Paul, drew him out of the citie, supposing he had beene dead.

20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the citie, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached the Gospel to that city, and had taught many, they returned againe to Lystra, and to Iconium, and Antioch.

22 Confirming the soules of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the Faith, and that wee must through much tribulation enter into the kingdome of God.

23 And when they had ordained them Elders in every Church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they believed.

24 And after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went downe into Attalia:

26 And thence sailed to Antioch, from whence they had been recommended to the grace of God for the worke which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come, and had gathered the Church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the doore of Faith unto the Gentiles.

28 And there they abode long time with the disciples,

CHAP.

## CHAP. XV.

*2 Dissension touching circumcision. 6 The apostles consult about it. 22 Their determination.*

AND certain men which came down from Judea, taught the brethren, *and said*, Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved.

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and disputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them should go up to Jerusalem unto the Apostles and Elders about this question.

3 And being brought on their way by the church they passed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles: and they caused great joy unto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the Church, and of the Apostles, and Elders: and they declared all things that God had done with them.

5 But there arose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which believed, saying: That it was needfull to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

6 ¶ And the Apostles and Elders came together for to consider of this matter.

7 And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose up and said unto them, Men *and* brethren ye know how that a good while ago God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the Gospel, and believe.

8 And God which knoweth the hearts bare them witnesse, giving them the holy Ghost, even as *he did* unto us:

9 And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith.

10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear.

11 But we believe, that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as they.

12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept silence and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

13 ¶ And after they had held their peace, James answer-

answered, saying, Men & brethre, hearke unto me.

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles to take out of them a people for his name.

15 And to this agree the words of the prophets: as it is written,

16 After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David which is fallen down: and I will build again the ruines thereof, and I will set it up.

17 That the residue of men might seek after the Lord, & all the Gentiles upon whom my name is called, saith the Lord who doth all these things.

18 Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them which from among the Gentiles are turned to God:

20 But that wee write unto them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and *from* fornication, and *from* things strangled, and *from* blood.

21 For Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath-day.

22 Then pleased it the Apostles and Elders with the whole church, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas: *namely*, Judas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren:

23 And wrote letters by them after this manner: The Apostles, and Elders, and brethren, send greeting unto the brethren *which are* of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia.

24 Forasmuch as wee have heard that certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, *Ye must* bee circumcised and keep the Law, to whom wee gave no *such* commandment:

25 It seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men unto you, with our beloved Barnabas and Paul:

26 Men that have hazarded their lives *for* the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell *you* the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and to

us, to lay upon you no greater burden then these necessarie things:

29 That yee abstaine from meats offered to idols, and from bloud, and from things strangled, and from Fornication: From which if ye keep your selves, yee shall doe well. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered the Epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they rejoyced for the consolation.

32 And Judas and Silas being prophets also themselves, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them.

33 And after they had tarried there a space, they were let go in peace from the brethren unto the Apostles.

34 Notwithstanding, it pleased Silas to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

36 ¶ And some dayes after, Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us goe againe and visite our brethren in every city where wee have preached the word of the Lord, and see how they doe.

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them John, whose surname was Marke.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them who departed from them from Pamphilia, and went not with them to the worke.

39 And the contention was so sharp betweene them, that they departed asunder the one from the other, and so Barnabas took Marke, and sailed unto Cyprus.

40 And Paul chose Silas and departed, being recommended by the brethren unto the grace of God.

41 And hee went through Syria and Cilicia, confirming the Churches.

## CHAP. XVI.

*1 Paul circumciseth Timothy, 14 converteth Lydia, 16 casteth out a spirit of divination.*

THen came he to Derbe & Lystra: and behold, a certain disciple was there named Timotheus, the son of a certain woman *which was a* Jewesse, and beleeved: but his father *was a* Greeke

2 Which

2 Which was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium.

3 Him would Paul have to go forth with him, and tooke and circumcised him, because of the Iewes which were in those quarters: For they knew all that his father was a Greeke.

4 And as they went through the cities, they delivered them the decrees for to keepe, that were ordained of the Apostles and Elders *which were* at Jerusalem.

5 And so were the Churches established in the faith, and increased in number daily.

6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia.

7 After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffred them not.

8 And they passing by Mysia came downe to Troas.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul *in the night*: There stood a man of Macedonia & prayed him, saying, Come over into Macedonia, and helpe us.

10 And after he had seen the vision, immediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia, assuredly gathering that the Lord had called us for to preach the Gospel unto them.

11 Therefore loosing from Troas, wee came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next *day* to Neapolis:

12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the chief city of that part of Macedonia & a colony: and we were in that citie abiding certain *dayes*.

13 And on the Sabbath we went out of the citie, by a river side, where prayer was wont to be made, and we sate downe, and spake unto the women which resorted *thither*.

14 ¶ And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard *us*: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul.

15 And when she was baptized, and her household, she besought *us*, saying, If ye have judged me to bee faithfull to the Lord, come into my house, and abide *there*. And she constrained us.

16 ¶ And it came to passe as we went to prayer, a certaine

certain damsell possessed with a spirit of divination met us: which brought her masters much gain by sooth-saying.

17 The same followed Paul and us, and cried, saying, These men are the servants of ℣ most high God, which shew unto us the way of salvation.

18 And this did she many dayes: but Paul being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the same houre.

19 ¶ And when her masters saw that the hope of their gains was gone, they caught Paul & Silas, & drew them into the market-place unto the rulers,

20 And brought them to the Magistrates, saying, These men, being Jewes, do exceedingly trouble our city,

21 And teach customes which are not lawfull for us to receive, neither to observe, being Romanes.

22 And the multitude rose up together against them: and the Magistrates rent off their clothes, and commanded to beat *them*.

23 And when they had laid many stripes upon them, they cast *them* into prison, charging the Jaylour to keep them safely.

24 Who, having received such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

25 ¶ And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediatly all the doores were opened, and every ones bands were loosed.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison doores open he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had been fled.

28 But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, Do thy self no harm, for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling & fell down before Paul & Silas,

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved?

31 And they said, Beleeve on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thine house.

32 And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all *that were* in his house.

33 And hee took them the same houre of the night, and washed *their* stripes: and was baptized, he and all his straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoyced beleeving in God with all his house.

35 And when it was day the Magistrates sent the Sergeants, saying, Let those men go.

36 And the keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul, The Magistrates have sent to let you go: now therefore depart, and go in peace.

37 But Paul said unto them, They have beaten us openly, uncondemned, being Romanes, and have cast us into prison: and now do they thrust us out privily? Nay verily, but let them come themselves and fetch us out.

38 And the Sergeants told these words unto the Magistrates: and they feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 And they came and besought them & brought *them* out & desired *them* to depart out of ỹ city.

40 And they went out of the prison, and entred into the house of Lydia: and when they had seen the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

## CHAP. XVII.

1 *Paul preacheth at Thessalonica, 10 and at Berea.* 15 *He disputeth and preacheth at Athens.*

NOw when they had passed through Amphipolis and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews.

2 And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three sabbath-dayes reasoned with them out of the Scriptures.

3 Opening and alledging that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead: and that this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ.

4 And some of them beleeved, & consorted with Paul and Silas: and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.

5 ¶ But the Jews which beleeved not, moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd fellows of the baser sort, and gathered a company, & set all the city on an uprore, & assaulted ỹ house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to ỹ people.

6 And

6 And when they found them not, they drew Jason, and certaine brethren vnto the rulers of the city, crying, These that haue turned the world vpside downe, are come hither also.

7 Whom Jason hath receiued: and these all do contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying, That there is another king, one Jesus.

8 And they troubled the people, and the rulers of the city, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken securitie of Jason, and of the rest, they let them go.

10 ¶ And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea: who comming thither went into the Synagogue of the Iewes.

11 These were more noble then those in Thessalonica, in that they receiued the word with all readinesse of minde, and searched the Scriptures daily whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleeued: also of honourable women, which were Greeks, and of men not a few.

13 But when the Iewes of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred vp the people.

14 And then immediatly the brethren sent away Paul to go as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that conducted Paul brought him vnto Athens: and receiuing a commandment vnto Silas and Timotheus for to come to him with all speed, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the citie wholly giuen to idolatrie.

17 Therefore disputed he in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with the deuout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him.

18 Then certain Philosophers of the Epicurians and of the Stoicks encountred him: And some said, What will this babler say? Other some, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached vnto them Jesus and the resurrection.

19 And they took him, and brought him vnto Areopagus, saying, May we know what this new doctrine

doctrine whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certaine strange things to our eares: wee would know therefore what these things meane

21 (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell or to heare some new thing.)

22 ¶ Then Paul stood in the mids of Mars-hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD, Whom therefore yee ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.

24 God that made the world, and all things therein, seeing that hee is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands:

25 Neither is worshipped with mens hands, as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things.

26 And hath made of one blood, all nations of men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation:

27 That they should seeke the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and finde him, though he be not far from every one of us.

28 For in him we live, and move, and have our being, as certain also of your owne poets have said, For wee are also his offspring.

29 Forasmuch then as wee are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone graven by art and mans device.

30 And § times of this ignorance God winked at, but now commandeth all men every where to repent

31 Because hee hath appointed a day in the which he will judge the world in righteousnesse, by that man whom he hath ordained, whereof hee hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

32 ¶ And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, We will heare thee againe of this matter.

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit, certaine men clave unto him, and

beleeved: among the which was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

## CHAP. XVIII.

*3 Paul laboureth with his hands, and preaching at Corinth, 9 is encouraged in a vision.*

AFter these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth.

2 And found a certain Jew named Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla (because that Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome) and came unto them.

3 And because hee was of the same craft, hee abode with them, and wrought (for by their occupation they were Tent makers)

4 And he reasoned in the Synagogue every Sabbath, and perswaded the Jews and the Greeks.

5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was prested in spirit, and testified to the Jews, that Jesus was Christ.

6 And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your bloud be upon your own heads, I am clean: From henceforth I will goe unto the Gentiles.

7 And he departed thence, and entred into a certain mans house, named Justus, one that worshipped God, whose house joyned hard to the Synagogue.

8 And Crispus the chief ruler of the Synagogue, beleeved on the Lord, with all his house: and many of the Corinthians, hearing, beleeved, and were baptized.

9 Then spak the Lord to Paul in the night, by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, & hold not thy peace:

10 For I am with thee, & no man shal set on thee, to hurt thee: For I have much people in this city.

11 And hee continued there a year and six moneths, teaching the word of God among them.

12 And when Gallio was the deputie of Achaia, the Jews made insurrection with one accord against Paul and brought him to the judgement seat,

13 Saying, This fellow perswadeth men to worship God contrarie to the law.

14 And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a matter of wrong, or wicked lewdnesse, O yee Jews, reason would that I should bear with you.

15 But

25 But if it be a question of words and names, and of your law, look ye to it, for I will be no judge of such matters.

26 And he drave them from the judgement seat.

17 Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the Synagogue, and beat him before the judgement seat: and Gallio cared for none of those things.

18 ¶ And Paul after this, tarried there yet a good while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila: having shorne his head in Cenchrea: For he had a vow.

19 And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he himself entred into the Synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews.

20 When they desired him to tarry longer time with them, he consented not:

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all means keepe this feast that cometh, in Jerusalem, but I will returne again unto you, if God will: and he sailed from Ephesus.

22 And when he had landed at Cesarea, & gone up and saluted § Church, he went down to Antioch.

23 And after he had spent some time there, hee departed, and went over all the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia in order, strengthening all the disciples.

24 ¶ And a certaine Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mightie in the Scriptures, came to Ephesus.

25 This man was instructed in the way of the Lord, and being fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptisme of John.

26 And hee began to speak boldly in the Synagogue: whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they tooke him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when hee was disposed to passe into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him: who, when hee was come, helped them much which had believed through grace.

28 For hee mightily convinced the Jews, and that publickly, shewing by the Scriptures, that Jesus was Christ.

*6 The holy Ghost given by Pauls hands.*

AND it came to passe, that while Apollo was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts, came to Ephesus, and finding certaine disciples,

2 He said unto them, Have ye received the holy Ghost since yee beleeved? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any holy Ghost.

3 And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? and they said, Unto Johns baptisme.

4 Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptisme of repentance, saying unto the people, That they should beleeve on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.

5 When they heard this, they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Jesus.

6 And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelve.

8 And he went into the Synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing and perswading the things concerning the kingdome of God.

9 But when divers were hardened, and beleeved not, but spake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing daily in the School of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two yeares, so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks.

11 And God wrought speciall miracles by the hands of Paul.

12 So ¶ from his body were brought unto the sick, handkerchiefs, or aprons, & the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them.

13 ¶ Then certaine of the vagabond Jews, exorcists took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits, the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, we adjure you by Jesus, whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were seven sons of one Sceva, a Jew, and chief of the priests which did so.

15 And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know, but who are ye?

16 And

16 And the man in whom the evil spirit was, leapt on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

17 And this was knowne to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus, and fear fell on them all, and the Name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.

18 And many that beleeved came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds.

19 Many also of them which used curious arts, brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fiftie thousand pieces of silver.

20 So mightily grew the word of God, and prevailed.

21 ¶ After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when hee had passed through Macedonia and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome.

22 So he sent into Macedonia two of them that ministred unto him, Timotheus and Erastus, but he himself stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stir about that way.

24 For a certain man named Demetrius, a silver Smith which made silver shrines for Diana, brought no small gaine unto the craftsmen.

25 Whom he called together with the workemen of like occupation, and said, Sirs, yee know that by this craft wee have our wealth.

26 Moreover, yee see and hear, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath perswaded and turned away much people, saying, That they be no gods which are made with hands.

27 So that not only this our craft is in danger to be set at nought: but also that the Temple of the great goddesse Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard these sayings, they were full of wrath, and cryed out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole city was filled with confusion, and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus,

men of Macedonia, Pauls companions in travel, they rushed with one accord into the Theatre.

30 And when Paul would have entred in unto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 And certain of the chief of Asia, which were his friends, sent unto him, desiring him that he would not adventure himself into the Theatre.

32 Some therefore cryed one thing, & some another: For the assembly was confused, and the more part knew not wherfore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward. And Alexander beckned with the hand, and would have made his defence unto the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Jew, all with one voice, about the space of two houres cryed out, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the town-clerk had appeased the people, he said, Yee men of Ephesus what man is there ỹ knoweth not how that the city of the Ephesians is a worshipper of ỹ great goddesse Diana, & of the *image* which fell down from Jupiter,

36 Seeing then ỹ these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, & to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye have brought hither these men which are neither robbers of Churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddesse.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius and the craftsmen which are with him, have a matter against any man the law is open, and there are deputies, let them implead one another.

39 But if ye enquire any thing concerning other matters, it shalbe determined in a lawful assembly.

40 For we are in danger to be called in question for this dayes uprore, there being no cause wherby we may give an account of this concourse.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

## CHAP. XX.

*a Paul celebrateth the Lords Supper, & preacheth.*

AND after the uprore was ceased, Paul called unto him the disciples, and embraced them, and departed for to goe into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone over these parts, & had given them much exhortation, he came into Greece.

3 And there abode three monethes; and when the

Jews

Jews laid waite for him, as he was about to saile into Syria, he purposed to return through Macedonia.
4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea; and of the Thessalonians Aristarchus and Secundus: and Gaius of Derbe: and Timotheus: and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.
5 These going before, tarried for us at Troas.
6 And we sailed away from Philippi, after the dayes of unleavened bread, & came unto them to Troas in five dayes, where we abode seven dayes.
7 And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow, and continued his speech untill mid-night.
8 And there were many lights in the upper chamber, where they were gathered together.
9 And there sate in a window a certain young man named Eutychus, being fallen into a deepe sleepe, and as Paul was long preaching, he sunke down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead.
10 And Paul went downe, and fell on him, and embracing him, said, Trouble not yourselves for his life is in him.
11 When he therefore was come up again, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, even till breake of day, so he departed.
12 And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.
13 ¶ And we went before to ship, and sailed unto Assos, there intending to take in Paul: For so had he appointed, minding himself to go afoot.
14 And when he met with us at Assos, we took him in, and came to Mitylene.
15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day over against Chios, and the next day we arrived at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium: and the next day wee came to Miletus.
16 For Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: For he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Jerusalem the day of Pentecost.
17 ¶ And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the Church.
18 And when they were come to him, he said unto them, Ye know from the first day that I came into

Asia, after what manner I have beene with you at all seasons,

19 Serving the Lord with all humility of minde and with many teares, and temptations which befell me by the lying in wait of the Iews.

20 And how I kept back nothing that was profitable unto you, but have shewed you and have taught you publickly, and from house to house,

21 Testifying both to the Iews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and Faith toward our Lord Iesus Christ.

22 And now behold, I go bound in the spirit unto Ierusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall me there:

23 Save that the holy Ghost witnesseth in every city, saying, That bonds and afflictions abide me.

24 But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto my self: so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministery which I have received of the Lord Iesus, to testifie the gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that ye all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdome of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the bloud of all men.

27 For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.

28 ¶ Take heed therefore unto your selves, and unto all the flock, over the which the holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the Church of God, which he hath purchased with his own bloud.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flocke.

30 Also of your owne selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember, that by the space of three years, I ceased not to warn every one night and day with teares.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

33 I have coveted no mans silver, or gold, or apparell,

34 Yea

34 Yea, you your selves know, that these hands have ministred unto my necessities, and to them that were with me.

35 I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring, ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Iesus, how he said, It is more blessed to give then to receive.

36 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all.

37 And they all wept sore, and fell on Pauls necke and kissed him.

38 Sorrowing most of all for the words which he spake, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ship.

## CHAP. XXI.

*4 Paul will not be dissuaded from going to Ierusalem.*

AND it came to passe, that after we were gotten from them, & had lanched, we came with a straight course unto Choos, and the day following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara.

2 And finding a ship sailing over unto Phenicia, we went aboard, and set forth.

3 Now when we had discovered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, & sailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there ỹ ship was to unlade her burden.

4 And finding disciples, we tarried there seven dayes: who said to Paul through the spirit, that he should not go up to Ierusalem.

5 And when wee had accomplished those dayes, wee departed and went our way, and they all brought us on our way, with wives and children, till wee were out of the citie: and wee kneeled downe on the shore, and prayed.

6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ship, and they returned home again.

7 And when wee had finished our course from Tyre, wee came to Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day we that were of Pauls company departed, and came to Cesarea, and we entred into the house of Philip the Evangelist (which was one of the seven) and abode with him.

9 And the same man had foure daughters, Virgins, which did prophesie.

10 And as wee tarried there many dayes, there

came downe from Judea a certaine prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come unto us, he took Paules girdle, and bond his own hands and feet, and said: Thus saith the holy Ghost: So shall the Jewes at Jerusalem binde the man that oweth this girdle, & shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when wee heard these things, both wee and they of that place, besought him not to go up to Jerusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, What mean yee to weep, and to break mine heart? For I am ready not to be bound only, but also to die at Jerusalem for the Name of the Lord Jesus.

14 And when he would not be perswaded, we ceased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after those dayes wee tooke up our carriages, and went up to Jerusalem.

16 There went with us also certain of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when we were come to Jerusalem, the brethren received us gladly.

18 And the day following Paul went in with us unto James, and all the elders were present.

19 And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministery.

20 And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and said unto him, Thou seest brother, how many thousands of Jews there are which believe, and they are all zealous of the law.

21 And they are informed of thee ye thou teachest all the Jewes which are among the Gentiles, to forsake Moses, saying, ye they ought not to circumcise their childre, neither to walk *after* ye customs.

22 What is it therefore? The multitude must needs come together, for they will heare that thou art come.

23 Doe therefore this that we say to thee; we have foure men which have a vow on them:

24 Them take, and purifie thy self with them, and bear charges with them, that they may shave their heads: and all may know that those things whereof they were informed concerning thee, are

nothing

nothing, but that thou thy selfe also walkest orderly, and keepest the law.

25 As touching the Gentiles which beleeve, we have written and concluded, that they observe no such thing, save only that they keep themselves from things offered to idols, and from blood, and from strangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying himselfe with them, entred into the Temple, to signifie the accomplishment of the dayes of purification, untill that an offering should be offered for every one of them.

27 And when the seven dayes were almost ended, the Jews which were of Asia, when they saw him in the Temple, stirred up all the people, and laid hands on him.

28 Crying out, Men of Israel, helpe: this is the man that teacheth all men every where against the people, and the law, and this place: and further, brought Greeks also into the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 (For they had seen before with him in the citie Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the Temple)

30 And all the city was moved, & the people ran together: & they took Paul, and drew him out of the Temple: and forthwith the doores were shut.

31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the chiefe captaine of the band, that all Jerusalem was in an uprore.

32 Who immediatly tooke Souldiers and centurions, and ran down unto them: and when they saw the chiefe captaine and the souldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chief captain came near & took him, & commanded him to be bound with two chains, and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And some cryed one thing and some another, among the multitude: and when hee could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to bee carried into the Castle.

35 And when hee came upon the stairs, so it was that he was borne of the Souldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And

37 And as Paul was to bee led into the castle, he said unto the chief captain, May I speak unto thee? Who said, Canst thou speak Greeke?

38 Art not thou ẏ Egyptian which before these daies madst an uptore, & leddest out into the wildernes foure thousand men that were murderers.

39 But Paul said, I am a man which am a Jew of Tarsus, a city in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean city: & I beseech thee, suffer me to speak unto ẏ people.

40 And when he had given him licence, Paul stood on the staires, and beckened with the hand unto the people: & when there was made a great silence, he spake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

## CHAP. XXII.

1 *Paul declareth how hee was converted.*

MEn brethren, and fathers, hear yee my defence which I make now unto you.

2 (And when they heard that hee spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence: and he saith)

3 I am verily a man which am a Jew, born in Tarsus *a city* in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous towards God, as yee all are this day.

4 And I persecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into prison both men and women.

5 As also the high priest doth bear me witnesse, and all the estate of the elders: from whom also I received letters unto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring them which were there, bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.

6 And it came to passe, that as I made my journey, and was come nigh unto Damascus about noone, suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me.

7 And I fell unto the ground, and heard a voice, saying unto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest ẏ me?

8 And I answered, Who art thou Lord? And hee said unto mee, I am Jesus of Nazareth whom thou persecutest.

9 And they that were with me, saw indeed the light, and were afraid: but they heard not the voice of him that spake to me.

10 And I said, What shall I do, Lord? And the

Lord

Lord said unto me, Arise, and go into Damascus, and there shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to doe.

11 And when I could not see for the glorie of that light, beeing led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias, a devout man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews which dwelt there,

13 Came unto me, and stood, and said unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the same houre I looked up upon him.

14 And hee said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and see that just One, and shouldest hear the voice of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witnesse unto all men, of what thou hast seene and heard.

16 And now why tarriest thou? Arise, and bee baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the Name of the Lord.

17 And it came to passe, that when I was come againe to Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the Temple, I was in a trance:

18 And saw him, saying unto mee, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Jerusalem: For they will not receive thy testimony concerning mee.

19 And I said, Lord, they know that I imprisoned, and beat in every Synagogue them that believed on thee.

20 And when the bloud of thy martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, & consenting unto his death, & kept the raiment of them that slew him.

21 And he said unto me, Depart: For I will send thee far hence unto the Gentiles.

22 And they gave him audience unto this word, and then lift up their voices, and said, away with such a fellow from the earth: For it is not fit that he should live.

23 And as they cryed out, and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the aire,

24 The chiefe captaine commanded him to bee brought into the castle, and bade that he should be examined by scourging: that he might know wherefore they cryed so against him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said unto

unto the centurion that stood by. Is it lawfull for you to scourge a man that is a Romane, and uncondemned?

26 When the centurion heard that, he went and told the chiefe captaine, saying, take heed what thou doest, for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chief captaine came, and said unto him, Tell me, art thou a Romane? He said, Yea.

28 And the chief captaine answered, With a great sum obtained I this freedome. And Paul said, But I was free borne.

29 Then straightway they departed from him which should have examined him: and the chief captain also was afraid after he knew that he was a Romane, and because he had bound him.

30 On the morrow, *because* he would have known the certainty wherfore he was accused of the Jews, hee loosed him from his bands & commanded the chief priests and all their councel to appear, and brought Paul down, and set him before them.

## CHAP. XXIII.

1 *Paul pleadeth his cause. Ananias commandeth to smite him* 7 *Dissention among his accusers*

AND Paul earnestly beholding the Councel, said, Men and brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God, until this day.

2 And the high priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him, to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then said Paul unto him, God shall smite thee, thou whited wall: For sittest thou to judge mee after the law, and commandest mee to bee smitten contrary to the law?

4 And they that stood by, said, Revilest thou Gods high priest?

5 Then said Paul I wist not brethren, that he was the high Priest: For it is written, Thou shalt not speake evil of the ruler of thy people.

6 But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, he cryed out in the Councel, Men and brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee: of the hope and resurrection of the dead, I am called in question.

7 And when he had so said, there arose a dissension betweene the Pharisees and the Sadducees; and the multitude was divided.

8 For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection

rection, neither angel nor spirit; but the Phariſees confeſſe both.

9 And there aroſe a great cry: & the Scribes that were of the Phariſees part aroſe, & ſtrove, ſaying, we find no evil in this man: but if a ſpirit or an angel hath ſpoke to him, let us not fight againſt God.

10 And when there aroſe a great diſſention, the chief captain fearing leſt Paul ſhould have beene pulled in pieces of them, commanded the Souldiers to goe downe, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the Caſtle.

11 And the night following, the Lord ſtood by him, and ſaid, Bee of good cheere, Paul: For as thou haſt teſtified of mee in Jeruſalem, ſo muſt thou beare witneſſe alſo at Rome.

12 And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themſelves under a curſe, ſaying, That they would neither eat nor drinke till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more then fourty which had made this conſpiracie.

14 And they came to the chief prieſts & elders, & ſaid, we have bound our ſelves under a great curſe that we will eat nothing untill we have ſlain Paul.

15 Now therefore yee with the Councel, ſignifie to the chief captain, that he bring him down unto you to morrow, as though yee would enquire ſomething more perfectly concerning him: and we, or ever he come near, are readie to kill him.

16 And when Pauls ſiſters ſon heard of their lying in wait, he went and entred into the caſtle, and told Paul.

17 Then Paul called one of the centurions unto him, & ſaid, Bring this young man unto the chiefe captain: For he hath a certain thing to tell him.

18 So he took him, & brought him to the chief captain, and ſaid, Paul the priſoner called me unto him, and prayed me to bring this young man unto thee, who hath ſomething to ſay unto thee.

19 Then the chief captaine took him by the hand, and went with him aſide privately, and asked him, What is that thou haſt to tell mee?

20 And he ſaid, The Jews have agreed to deſire thee, that thou wouldeſt bring down Paul to morrow into the Councel, as though they would enquire ſome-what of him more perfectly.

21 But do not thou yeeld unto them: For there lye in wait for him of them more then fourty men, which have bound themselves with an oath, that they will neither eate nor drinke, till they have killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.

22 So the chiefe captain then let the young man depart, and charged him, See thou tell no man, that thou hast shewed these things to me.

23 And hee called unto him two centurions saying, Make ready two hundred souldiers to go to Cesarea, & horsemen threescore & tẽ, and spearmen two hundred, at the third houre of the night.

24 And provide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, & bring him safe unto Felix y governour.

25 And he wrote a letter after this manner.

26 Claudius Lysias, unto the most excellent governour, Felix, sendeth greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them: then came I with an armie, and rescued him, having understood that he was a Romane.

28 And when I would have knowne the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their Councel.

29 Whom I perceived to be accused of questions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthie of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was told me, how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I sent straightway to thee, & gave commandment to his accusers also, to say before thee what they had against him. Farewell.

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them, tooke Paul and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 On the morrow they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned to the castle.

33 Who when they came to Cesarea and delivered the Epistle to the governour, presented Paul also before him.

34 Who when the governour had read the letter, he asked of what province he was. And when he understood that he was of Cilicia:

35 I will hear thee, said he, when thine accusers are also come. And hee commanded him to be kept in Herods judgement hall.

CHAP.

*Paul accused by Tertullus, answereth for himself.*

AND after five dayes, Ananias the high Priest descended with the elders, and with a certaine orator named Tertullus, who enformed the governour against Paul.

2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying. Seeing that by thee we enjoy great quietnesse, & that very worthy deedes are done unto this nation by thy providence,

3 We accept it always and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankfulnesse.

4 Notwithstanding that I bee not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldest heare us of thy clemency a few words.

5 For wee have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of sedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ring-leader of the sect of the Nazarens.

6 Who also hath gone about to prophane the Temple: whom we took, and would have judged according to our law.

7 But the chief captain Lysias came upon us & with great violence took him away out of our hands:

8 Commanding his accusers to come unto thee: by examining of whom, thy self mayest take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Jews also assented, saying, That these things were so.

10 Then Paul, after that the governour had beckened unto him to speak, answered, Forasmuch as I know that thou hast been of many yeares a judge unto this nation, I doe the more cheerfully answere for my selfe.

11 Because that thou mayest understand, that there are yet but twelve dayes since I went up to Jerusalem for to worship.

12 And they neither found mee in the Temple disputing with any man, neither raising up the people, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the city:

13 Neither can they prove the things whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confesse unto thee, that after the way which they call heresie, so worship I the God of my Fathers, beleeving all things which are written in the law and the prophets.

15 And have hope towards God, which they them-

themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.

16 And herein doe I exercise my selfe to have alwayes a conscience void of offence toward God and toward men.

17 Now after many yeares I came to bring alms to my nation, and offerings.

18 Whereupon certaine Jews from Asia found me purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult.

19 Who ought to have beene here before thee and object, if they had ought against me.

20 Or else let these same here say, if they have found any evil doing in me, while I stood before the Councel

21 Except it bee for this one voice, that I cryed standing among them, Touching the resurrection of y dead, I am called in question by you this day.

22 And when Felix heard these things, having more perfect knowledge of that way, he deferred them, & said, When Lysias the chief captain shall come down, I will know the uttermost of your matter.

23 And he commanded a Centurion to keep Paul, and to let him have libertie, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister, or come unto him.

24 And after certain days, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewesse, he sent for Paul, & heard him concerning the Faith in Christ.

25 And as he reasoned of righteousnesse temperance, and judgement to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time, when I have a convenient season I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also y money should have been given him of Paul, y he might loose him: wherefore he sent for him the oftner & communed with him.

27 But after two yeares Portius Festus came into Felix room: and Felix willing to shew the Jews a pleasure, left Paul bound.

## CHAP. XXV.

1 *The Jews accuse Paul before Festus.* 8 *He answereth for himselfe.*

NOw when Festus was come into the province after three dayes he ascended from Cesarea to Jerusalem.

2 Then the high priest, and the chiefe of the Jews

informed him against Paul, and besought him,
3 And desired favour against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, laying wait in the way to kill him.
4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that hee himselfe would depart shortly thither.
5 Let them therefore, said he, which among you are able goe down with me, and accuse this man, if there be any wickednesse in him.
6 And when hee had tarried among them more then ten dayes, he went downe unto Cesarea, and the next day sitting in the judgement seat, commanded Paul to be brought.
7 And when he was come, the Jews which came downe from Jerusalem, stood round about, and laid many and grievous complaints against Paul, which they could not prove.
8 While he answered for himself, Neither against the law of the Jews, neither against the temple, nor yet against Cesar, have I offended any thing at all.
9 But Festus willing to do the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul & said, Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, & there be judged of these things before me?
10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cesars judgement seat, where I ought to be judged: to the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.
11 For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man may deliver me unto them. I appeal unto Cesar.
12 Then Festus when he had conferred with the Councel answered. Hast thou appealed unto Cesar? unto Cesar shalt thou goe.
13 And after certaine dayes, king Agrippa and Bernice came unto Cesarea to salute Festus.
14 And when they had been there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause unto the king, saying, There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix.
15 About whom when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews informed me, desiring to have judgement against him.
16 To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romanes to deliver any man to die, before that he which is accused, have the accusers face to

face,

face, and have licence to answer for himselfe co
cerning the crime laid against him.
17 Therefore when they were come hither, wit
out any delay on ỹ morrow I sate on ỹ judgem
seat, & I commanded the man to be brought for
18 Against whom when the accusers stood up, th
brought none accusatiō of such things as I suppos
19 But had certaine questions against him
their owne superstition, and of one Jesus, whi
was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.
20 And because I doubted of such manner
questions, I asked him whether hee would goe
Jerusalem, and there be judged of these matter
21 But when Paul had appealed to be reserv
unto the hearing of Augustus, I commanded hi
to be kept till I might send him to Cesar.
22 Then Agrippa said unto Festus, I would al
hear the man my selfe. To morrow, said he, th
shalt hear him.
23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was co
and Bernice, with great pomp, and was entred in
to the place of hearing, with the chief captaines
and principall men of the cittie, at Festus co
mandment Paul was brought forth.
24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all me
which are here present with us, yee see this ma
about whom all the multitude of the Jews hav
dealt with me both at Jerusalem, and also here
crying that he ought not to live any longer.
25 But when I found that he had committed no
thing worthy of death, & that he himself hath ap
pealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him
26 Of whom I have no certaine thing to write
unto my lord: wherefore I have brought him forth
before you, and specially before thee, O king Ag
grippa, that after examination had, I might have
some what to write.
27 For it seemeth to mee unreasonable to send
a prisoner, and not with all to signifie the crimes
laid against him.

## CHAP. XXVI.

*2 Paul before Agrippa declareth his life.*

THen Agrippa said unto Paul, Thou art per
mitted to speak for thy self. Then Paul stret
ched forth the hand, and answered for himselfe.
3 I think my self happy, king Agrippa, because I
shall

all answer for my self this day before thee, touching all ỹ things wherof I am accused of ỹ Jewes
2 Especially because I know thee to be expert in all customes and questions which are among the Jews wherfore I beseech thee to hear me patiently.
3 My manner of life from my youth, which was at the first among mine owne nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews.
5 Which knew me from the beginning. (if they would testifie) that after the most straitest sect of our religion, I lived a Pharisee.
6 And now I stand, and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our Fathers:
7 Unto which promise our twelve tribes instantly serving God day & night, hope to come: For which hopes sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.
8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?
9 I verily thought with my selfe, that I ought to doe many things contrarie to the Name of Jesus of Nazareth.
10 Which thing I also did in Jerusalem, and many of the Saints did I shut up in prison, having received authoritie from the chiefe priests: and when they were put to death I gave my voice against them.
11 And I punished them oft in every Synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme: and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto strange cities.
12 Whereupon as I went to Damascus, with authoritie and commission from the chief priests:
13 At midday O king, I saw in ỹ way a light from heaven, above ỹ brightnes of ỹ sun, shining round about me, and them which journeyed with me.
14 And when wee were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to kick against the pricke.
15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.
16 But rise, and stand upon thy feet, for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witnesse both of these things which thou hast seene, and of those things in the which I will appeare unto thee,

17 Delivering

17 Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee.

18 To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkneſſe to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveneſſe of ſins, and inheritance among them which are ſanctified by Faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not diſobedient unto the heavenly viſion.

20 But ſhewed firſt unto them of Damaſcus, and at Jeruſalem, & throughout all the coaſts of Judea, & then to the Gentiles, that they ſhould repent and turne to God, and do works meet for repentance.

21 For theſe cauſes the Jews caught me in the Temple, and went about to kill me.

22 Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witneſſing both to ſmall and great, ſaying none other things then thoſe which the Prophets and Moſes did ſay ſhould come:

23 That Chriſt ſhould ſuffer, & that he ſhould be the firſt that ſhould riſe from the dead, and ſhould ſhew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus ſpake for himſelf, Feſtus ſaid with a loud voice, Paul thou art beſide thy ſelfe, much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But he ſaid, I am not mad, moſt noble Feſtus, but ſpeak forth the words of truth and ſoberneſſe.

26 For the king knoweth of all theſe things before whom alſo I ſpeak freely: For I am perſwaded that none of theſe things are hidden from him: For this thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, beleeveſt thou the Prophets? I know that thou beleeveſt.

28 Then Agrippa, ſaid unto Paul, Almoſt thou perſwadeſt me to be a Chriſtian.

29 And Paul ſaid, I would to God, that not only thou, but alſo all that hear me this day, were both almoſt & altogether ſuch as I am, except theſe bonds.

30 And when he had thus ſpoken, the king roſe up, and the governour, and Bernice, and they that ſate with them.

31 And when they were gone aſide, they talked betweene themſelves ſaying, This man doth nothing worthie of death, nor of bonds.

32 Then ſaid Agrippa unto Feſtus, This man might have been ſet at libertie, if he had not appealed unto Ceſar.

CHAP.

*Paul shipping towards Rome, 10 foretelleth of the danger of the voyage.*

AND when it was determined that wee should sail into Italy, they delivered Paul and certaine other prisoners, unto one named Julius, a centurion of Augustus band.

2 And entring into a ship of Adramittium, we launched, meaning to sail by the coasts of Asia one Aristarchus a Macedonian, of Thessalonica being with us.

3 And the next day wee touched at Sidon. And Julius courteously entreated Paul, and gave him liberty to go unto his friends to refresh himself.

4 And when wee had launched from thence, wee sailed under Cyprus, because the windes were contrarie.

5 And when wee had sailed over the sea of Cilicia & Pamphilia, we came to Myra a city of Lycia.

6 And there the centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing into Italie, and he put us therein.

7 And when wee had sailed slowly many dayes, and scarce were come over against Gnidus, the winde not suffering us, we sailed under Creet, over against Salmone.

8 And hardly passing it, came unto a place, which is called the The fair havens, nigh whereunto was the citie of Lasea.

9 Now when much time was spent, and when sailing was now dangerous, because the fast was now already past, Paul admonished them,

10 And said unto them Sirs, I perceive that this voyage will be with hurt and much damage, not only of the ladning and ship, but also of our lives.

11 Nevertheless, the centurion beleeved the maister and the owner of the ship, more then those things which were spoken by Paul.

12 And because the haven was not commodious to winter in, the more part advised to depart thence also, if by any means they might attain to Phenice and there to winter: which is an haven in Creet, and lieth toward the South-west, and north-west.

13 And when the South-winde blew softly, supposing that they had obtained their purpose, loosing thence, they sailed close by Creet.

14 But not long after, there arose against it a tempestuous winde, called Euroclydon.

15 And

19 And when the ship was caught, and could not beare up into the winde, we let her drive.

18 And running under a certain Iland which is called Clauda, wee had much worke to come by the boate.

17 Which when they had taken up, they used helpes, undergirding the ship: and fearing least they should fall into the quick-sands, strake sayle, and so were driven.

18 And beeing exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the next day they lightned the ship.

19 And the third day wee cast out with our own hands the tackling of the ship.

20 And when neither sun, nor starrs in many dayes appeared, and no small tempest lay upon us, all hope that we should be saved, was then taken away.

21 But after long abstinence, Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should have hearkened unto mee, and not have loosed from Creet, and to have gained this harm and losse.

22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheere: For there shall be no losse of any mans life among you, but of the ship.

23 For there stood by me this night the angell of God, whose I am, and whom I serve,

24 Saying, Fear not Paul, thou must be brought before Cesar: and lo, God hath given thee all them that saile with thee.

25 Wherefore sirs, be of good cheere: For I beleeve God, that it shall be even as it was told me.

26 Howbeit we must be cast upon a certain Iland.

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria about midnight, the shipmen deemed that they drew neere to some country:

28 And sounded, and found it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded again, and found it fifteen fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest we should have fallen upon rocks, they cast foure ancres out of the sterne, and wished for the day.

30 And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let down the boate into the sea, under colour as though they would have cast ancres out of the fore ship.

31 Paul said to the centurion & to the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved.

31 Then the ſouldiers cut off the ropes of the
boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was coming on, Paul be-
ought them all to take meat, ſaying, This day
s the fourteenth day that yee have tarried, and
ontinued faſting having taken nothing.

34 Wherefore I pray you to take ſome meat,
or this is for your health: for there ſhall not an
air fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus ſpoken, he took bread
nd gave thanks to God in preſence of them all,
nd when he had broken it, he began to eat.

36 Then were they all of good cheer, and they
lſo took ſome meat.

37 And we were in all in the ſhip, two hundred
reeſcore and ſixteen ſouls.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they light-
ned the ſhip, and caſt out the wheat into the ſea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the
nd: but they diſcovered a certain creek, with
hore, into the which they were minded, if it
ere poſſible, to thruſt in the ſhip.

40 And when they had taken up the ancres,
ey committed themſelves unto the ſea, and
oſed the rudder bands, and hoyſed up the main
ail to the winde, and made toward ſhore.

41 And falling into a place where two ſeas met,
ey ran the ſhip aground, and the forepart ſtuck
aſt, and remained unmoveable, but the hinder-
art was broken with the violence of the waves.

42 And the ſouldiers counſel was to kill the priſo-
ers, leſt any of them ſhould ſwim out, and eſcape.

43 But the centurion, willing to ſave Paul, kept
em from their purpoſe, and commanded that
ey which could ſwim, ſhould caſt themſelves
ſt into the ſea, and get to land:

44 And the reſt, ſome on boards, and ſome on
roken pieces of the ſhip: and ſo it came to paſſe
at they eſcaped all ſafe to land.

## CHAP. XXVIII.

### *The Barbarians kindneſſe to Paul.*

AND when they were eſcaped, then they knew
that the iſland was called Melita.

2 And the barbarous people ſhewed us no little
indneſſe: for they kindled a fire and received us
very one becauſe of the preſent rain, and becauſe
of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundel of sticks, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastened on his hand.

4 And when the Barbarians saw the venemous beast hang on his hand, they said among themselves. No doubt this man is a murderer, whom though he hath escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffereth not to live.

5 And he shook off the beast into the fire and felt no harm.

6 Howbeit they looked when hee should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their minder, and said that he was a God.

7 In the same quarters were possessions of ỹ chief man of the island, whose name was Publius, who received us & lodged us three dayes courteously.

8 And it came to passe that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever, and of a bloudy flix, to whom Paul entred in and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, others also which had diseases in the island, came and were healed:

10 Who also honoured us with many honours and when we departed, they laded us with such things as were necessary.

11 And after three moneths we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the isle whose signe was Castor and Pollux.

12 And landing at Syracuse, we tarried there three dayes.

13 And from thence we set a compasse, and came to Rhegium, and after one day, the south-winde blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli:

14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarry with them seven dayes: and so we went toward Rome.

15 And from thence when the brethren heard of us, they came to meet us as far as Appii forum, and the Three taverns: whom when Paul saw, he thanked God and took courage.

16 And when we came to Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himself, with a souldier that kept him.

17 And

17 And it came to passe, that after three dayes Paul called the chiefe of the Jews together. And when they were come together, he said unto them Men and brethren, though I have committed nothing against the people or customes of our fathers, yet was I delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hand of the Romanes.

18 Who when they had examined me, would have let me go, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Jews spake against it, I was constrained to appeal unto Cesar, not that I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore have I called for you to see you, and to speak with you, because that for y hope of Israel I am bound with this chain.

21 And they said unto him, we neither received letters out of Judea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harme of thee.

22 But we desire to hear of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect we know that every where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging, to whom he expounded and testified the kingdome of God, perswading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening.

24 And some beleeved the things which were spoken, and some beleeved not.

25 And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet, unto our Fathers,

26 Saying, go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand, and seeing ye shall see and not perceive.

27 For the heart of this people is waxed grosse & their ears are dull of hearing, & their eies have they closed, lest they should see with their eyes & hear with their ears & understand w their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

28 Be it known therfore unto you that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it.

29 And when he had said these words, y Jews de-

parted,& had great reasoning among themselves.
30 And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired house and received all ỹ came in unto him,
31 Preaching the kingdome of God,& teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

## THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE Apostle to the Romanes.

### CHAP. I.

1 *Pauls calling* 18 *God is angry with all sin.*

PAul a servant of Jesus Christ, called *to bee* an Apostle, separated unto the Gospel of God:
2 (Which he had promised afore by his Prophets in the holy scriptures)
3 Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David, according to the flesh.
4 And declared to bee the Son of God, with power, according to the Spirit of holinesse, by the resurrection from the dead.
5 By whom wee have received grace and apostleship for obedience to the faith among all nations for his name.
6 Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ.
7 To all that bee in Rome, beloved of God, called *to be* saints: Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.
8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.
9 For God is my witnesse, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, ỹ without ceasing I make mention of you alwayes in my prayers,
10 Making request (if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God) to come unto you.
11 For I long to see you that I may impart unto you some spirituall gift, to the end you may be established.
12 That is, that I may be comforted together with you, by ỹ mutuall faith both of you & me.
13 Now I would not have you ignorant, bre-

(ren,

thren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you (but was let hitherto) that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other gentiles.

14 I am debter both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians, both to the wise, and to the unwise.

15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is ℣ power of God unto salvation, to every one that beleeveth, to ℣ Jew first, & also to ℣ Greek.

17 For therein is the righteousnesse of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith.

18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodlinesse, and unrighteousnesse of men who hold the truth in unrighteousnesse.

19 Because that which may be known of God, is manifest in the, for God hath shewed it unto them.

20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by ℣ things that are made, even his eternall power & Godhead, so that they are without excuse.

21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankfull, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.

22 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools:

23 And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God, into an image made like to corruptible man, & to birds, & four footed beasts, & creeping things.

24 Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanesse, through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves.

25 Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped & served the creature more then the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

26 For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the naturall use into that which is against nature.

27 And likewise also the men leaving the naturall use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another, men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their errour which was meet.

28 And even as they did not like to retain

God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate minde, to do those things which are not conuenient

29 Being filled with all vnrighteousnes, fornication, wickednes, couetousnes, maliciousnes, full of enuy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity, whisperers

30 Backbiters, haters of God, despitefull, proud, boasters, inuenters of euil things, disobedient to parents

31 Without vnderstanding, couenant-breakers, without naturall affection, implacable, vnmerciful.

32 Who knowing the iudgement of God (that they which commit such things are worthy of death) not only do the same, but haue pleasure in them that do them.

## CHAP. II.

*1 They that condemne sin in others, and yet sin, are inexcusable, whether they be Iews or Gentiles*

THerefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoeuer thou art that iudgest: for wherein thou iudgest another, thou condemnest thy self, for thou that iudgest, doest the same things.

2 But we are sure that the iudgment of God is according to truth, against them which commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that iudgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the iudgement of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodnesse and forbearance, and long-suffering, not knowing that ℣ goodnes of God leadeth thee to repentance

5 But after thy hardnesse and impenitent heart, treasurest vp vnto thy selfe wrath against the day of wrath, and reuelation of the righteous iudgement of God:

6 Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

7 To them, who by patient continuance in well doing, seek for glory, and honour, and immortality, eternall life:

8 But vnto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey vnrighteousnesse, indignation, and wrath:

9 Tribulation & anguish vpon euery soul of man that doth euil, of the Iew first & also of ℣ Gentile

10 But glory, honour, and peace, to euery man that worketh

worketh good, of Jew firſt, & alſo of the Gentile.

11 For there is no reſpect of perſons with God.

12 For as many as have ſinned without law ſhall alſo periſh without law, and as many as have ſinned in the law, ſhall be judged by the law.

13 (For not the hearers of the law are juſt before God, but ℣ doers of the law ſhal be juſtified.

14 For when the Gentiles which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, theſe having not ℣ law are a law unto themſelves:

15 Which ſhew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conſcience alſo bearing witneſſe, and their thoughts the mean while accuſing or elſe excuſing one another)

16 In the day when God ſhall judge the ſecrets of men by Jeſus Chriſt according to my goſpel.

17 Behold, thou art called a Jew, and reſteſt in the law, and makeſt thy boaſt of God

18 And knoweſt *his* will, and approveſt the things that are more excellent, being inſtructed out of the law,

19 And art confident ℣ thou thy ſelfart a guide of ℣ blinde, a light of them *which are* in darkneſs,

20 An inſtructer of the fooliſh, a teacher of babes, which haſt the Forme of knowledge and of the truth in the law.

21 Thou therefore which teacheſt another teacheſt thou not thy ſelfe? thou that preacheſt a man ſhould not ſteal, doeſt thou ſteal?

22 Thou that ſayeſt a man ſhould not commit adultery, doeſt thou commit adultery? thou that abhorreſt idols, doeſt thou commit ſacrilege?

23 Thou that makeſt thy boaſt of the law, through breaking the law diſhonoureſt thou God?

24 For the name of God is blaſphemed among the Gentiles, through you, as it is written.

25 For circumciſion verily profiteth if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumciſion is made uncircumciſion.

26 Therefore, if the uncircumciſion keep the righteouſneſſe of the law, ſhall not his uncircumciſion be counted for circumciſion?

27 And ſhall not uncircumciſion which is by nature, if it fulfill the law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumciſion doeſt tranſgreſſe the law?

28 For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly,

neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh.

29 But he is a Jew which is one inwardly, & circumcision is of the heart, in the spirit, & not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

## CHAP. III.

*The Iews prerogative. 9 Yet the law convinceth them of sin. 28 But all are iustified by faith.*

WHat advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision?

2 Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God.

3 For what if some did not beleeve? shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar, as it is written, That thou mightest bee justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged.

5 But if our unrighteousnesse commend the righteousnes of God, what shal we say? Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speak as a man)

6 God forbid: for then how shall God judge the world?

7 For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner?

8 And not *rather* as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say, Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just.

9 What then? are wee better *then they*? No in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin,

10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no not one:

11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable, there is none that doth good, no not one.

13 Their throat is an open sepulchre, with their tongues they have used deceit, the poison of asps is under their lips.

14 Whose mouth is full of cursing & bitternes:

15 Their feet are swift to shed bloud.

16 Destruction and misery are in their wayes:

17 And the way of peace have they not known.

18 There

18 There is no fear of God before their eyes.

19 Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.

20 Therefore by the deeds of the law, there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for, by the law is the knowledge of sin.

21 But now the righteousnesse of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets.

22 Even the righteousnesse of God, which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all, and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:

23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.

24 Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ:

25 Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousnesse for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God.

26 To declare, I say, at this time his righteousnesse: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.

27 Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.

28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is justified by faith, without the deeds of the law.

29 Is he the God of the Jews only? is he not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:

30 Seeing it is one God which shall justifie § circumcision by faith, & uncircumcision through faith.

31 Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

## CHAP. IIII.

1 *Abrahams faith was imputed to him for righteousnesse, to before he was circumcised.*

WHat shal we say then, that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?

2 For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath *whereof* to glory, but not before God.

3 For what saith § scripture? Abraham believed God: & it was counted unto him for righteousnesse.

4 Now to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.

5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousnesse.

6 Even as David also describeth the blessednesse of the man unto whom God imputeth righteousnesse without works.

7 *Saying*, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered.

8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.

9 *Cometh* this blessednesse then upon the circumcision *only*, or upon the uncircumcision also? for we say that faith was reckoned unto Abraham for righteousnesse.

10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? not *in* circumcision but in uncircumcision.

11 And he received the signe of circumcision, a seal of the righteousnesse of the faith which *he had yet* being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousnesse might be imputed unto them also.

12 And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, *which he had* being yet uncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he should be the heir of the world, *was* not to Abraham, or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousnesse of faith.

14 For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect:

15 Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression.

16 Therefore *it is* of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed; not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all.

17 (As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations) before him whom he believed, *even* God who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were:

18 Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations; according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be.

19 And

19 And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred years old, neither yet the deadness of Sarahs womb:

20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God;

21 And being fully perswaded, that what he had promised, he was able also to performe.

22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousnesse.

23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him:

24 But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead.

25 Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

## CHAP. V.

1 *Being justified by faith, we have peace with God.*

THerefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God, through our Lord Jesus Christ

2 By whom also we have accesse by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoyce in hope of the glory of God.

3 And not only so, but we glory in tribulation also, knowing that tribulation worketh patience:

4 And patience experience, and experience hope:

5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts, by the holy Ghost, which is given unto us.

6 For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly.

7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die.

8 But God commendeth his love towards us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

9 Much more then being now justified by his bloud, we shall be saved from wrath through him.

10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son: much more being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

11 And not only so, but we also joy in God through our Lord Jesus Christ: by whom we have

now

now received the atonement.

12 Wherefore, as by one man sin entred into the world, and death by sin: and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.

13 For untill the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law.

14 Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adams transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come.

15 But not as ỹ offence, so also is ỹ free gift. For if through the offence of one, many be dead, much more the grace of God, and ỹ gift by grace *which* by one man Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many.

16 And not as *it was* by one that sinned, *so is* the gift: for the judgement was by one to condemnation: but the free gift is of many offences unto justification.

17 For if by one mans offence, death reigned by one, much more they which receive abundance of grace, and of the gift of righteousnesse, shall reigne in life by one, Jesus Christ.

18 Therefore as by the offence of one, *judgement came* upon all men to condemnation: even so by the righteousnesse of one, *the free gift came* upon all men unto justification of life.

19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners: so by the obedience of one, shall many be made righteous.

20 Moreover, the law entred, that the offence might abound: but where sin abounded, grace did much more abound.

21 That as sin hath reigned unto death: even so might grace reigne through righteousnesse unto eternall life, by Jesus Christ our Lord.

## CHAP. VI.

1 *We may not live in sin,* 12 *nor let sin reigne in us:* 23 *Death is the wages of sin.*

WHat shall we say then? shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?

2 God forbid: how shall wee that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?

3 Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?

4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptisme into death, that like as Christ was raised up from the

the dead by the glory of the Father: even so we also should walk in newnesse of life.

5 For if we have been planted together in the *likenesse* of his death: we shal be also in the *likenesse* of his resurrection;

6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

7 For he that is dead, is freed from sin.

8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him.

9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more, death hath no more dominion over him.

10 For in that he died, hee died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

11 Likewise reckon yee also your selves to bee dead indeed unto sin: but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sin therefore reigne in your mortall body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof;

13 Neither yeeld ye your members as instruments of unrighteousnes unto sin: but yeeld your selves unto God, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousnesse unto God.

14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

15 What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whom yee yeeld your selves servants to obey, his servants yee are to whom yee obey: whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousnesse?

17 But God bee thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered you.

18 Being then made free from sin, yee became the servants of righteousnesse.

19 I speak after the manner of men because of the infirmity of your flesh: for as ye have yeelded your members servants to uncleanesse & to iniquity unto iniquity, even so now yeeld your members servants to righteousnesse, unto holinesse.

20 For when yee were the servants of sin, yee were free from righteousnesse.

21 What

21 What fruit had ye then in those things, wherof ye are now ashamed? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

23 For the wages of sin is death: but the gift of God is eternall life, throgh Jesus Christ our Lord

## CHAP. VII

1 *No law hath power over a man longer then he liveth.*

KNow ye not, brethren (for I speak to them that know the law) how that the law hath dominion over a man, as long as he liveth?

2 For the woman which hath an husband, is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth: but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband.

3 So then if while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adultresse: but if her husband be dead she is free from that law: so that she is no adultresse, though she be married to another man.

4 Wherefore my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ, that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death.

6 But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held, that we should serve in newnesse of spirit, and not in the oldnes of the letter.

7 What shall we say then? is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law: for I had not known lust, except the law had said Thou shalt not covet.

8 But sin taking occasion by the commandement wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the law sin *was* dead.

9 For I was alive without the law once, but when the commandement came, sin revived, & I died.

10 And the commandment which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death.

11 For

11 For sin taking occasion by the commande-
ment deceived me, and by it slew me.
12 Wherefore the law is holy, and the com-
mandement holy, and just, and good.
13 Was then that which is good, made death
unto me? God forbid. But sin that it might ap-
pear sin, working death in me by that which is
good: that sin by the commandement might be-
come exceeding sinfull.
14 For we know that the law is spirituall: but
I am carnall, sold under sin.
15 For that which I do, I allow not: for what
I would, that do I not: but what I hate, that do I.
16 If then I do that which I would not, I con-
sent unto the law, that it is good.
17 Now then, it is no more I that do it: but
sin that dwelleth in me.
18 For I know, that in me (that is in my flesh)
dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present wi-
me, but how to perform that which is good, I find not
19 For the good that I would, I do not: but
the evil which I would not, that I do.
20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more
I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.
21 I finde then a law, that when I would doe
good, evil is present with me.
22 For I delight in the law of God, after the
inward man.
23 But I see another law in my members, warring
against the law of my minde, & bringing me into
captivity to the law of sin, which is in my members
24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deli-
ver me from the body of this death.
25 I thank God, through Jesus Christ our Lord,
So then, with the minde I my self serve the law
of God: but with the flesh the law of sin.

## CHAP. VIII.

*1 Who are free from condemnation: 13 What harm cometh of the flesh.*

THere is therefore now no condemnation to
them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not
after the flesh, but after the Spirit.
2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus
hath made me free from the law of sin and death.
3 For what the law could not do, in that it was
weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son
in

In the likeneſſe of ſinfull fleſh, and for ſin, condemned ſin in the fleſh:

4 That the righteouſneſſe of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the fleſh, but after the Spirit.

5 For they that are after the fleſh, do minde the things of the fleſh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.

6 For to bee carnally minded, is death: but to be ſpiritually minded, is life and peace.

7 Becauſe the carnall minde is enmitie againſt God: for it is not ſubject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

8 So then they ỹ are in ỹ fleſh cannot pleaſe God.

9 But ye are not in the fleſh, but in the Spirit, if ſo be ỹ the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any mã have not ỹ Spirit of Chriſt, he is none of his.

10 And if Chriſt be in you, ỹ body is dead becauſe of ſin: but ỹ Spirit is life becauſe of righteouſneſs.

11 But if the Spirit of him that raiſed up Jeſus from the dead, dwell in you: hee that raiſed up Chriſt from the dead ſhall alſo quicken your mortall bodies, by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

12 Therefore brethren, we are debtors not to the fleſh, to live after the fleſh.

13 For if ye live after the fleſh, ye ſhall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortifie the deedes of the body, ye ſhall live.

14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the ſons of God.

15 For yee have not received the ſpirit of bondage again to fear: but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

16 The Spirit it ſelf beareth witneſſe with our ſpirit, that we are the children of God.

17 And if children then heirs, heirs of God, and joynt heirs with Chriſt: if ſo be ỹ we ſuffer with him, that we may be alſo glorified together.

18 For I reckon that the ſufferings of this preſent time, are not worthy to bee compared with the glory which ſhall be revealed in us.

19 For the earneſt expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifeſtation of the ſons of God.

20 For the creature was made ſubject to vanity, not willingly, but by reaſon of him who hath ſubjected the ſame in hope,

21 Becauſe

21 Because the creature it self also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious libertie of the children of God.

22 For wee know that the whole creation groneth, and travelleth in pain together untill now.

23 And not only *they*, but our selves also which have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even wee our selves grone within our selves, waiting for the adoption, *to wit*, the redemption of our bodie.

24 For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen, is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?

25 But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit it self maketh intercession for us with gronings which cannot be uttered

27 And he ℣ searcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the minde of ℣ Spirit, because he maketh intercession for ℣ Saints according to *the wil* of God.

28 And we know that all things work together for good, to them that love God, to them who are the called according to *his* purpose.

29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to ℣ image of his Son, ℣ he might be ℣ first-born among many brethren.

30 Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: & whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who *can be* against us?

32 He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all: how shall hee not with him also freely give us all things?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect? It is God that justifieth:

34 Who is hee that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? *shall* tribulation or distresse or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or peril, or sword?

36 (As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long, wee are accounted as sheep for the slaughter)

37 Nay

37 Nay in all these things we are more then conquerers through him that loved us.

38 For I am perswaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come.

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separat us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

## CHAP. IX.

1 *Paul is sory for the Iews. 7 All the seed of Abraham were not the children of the promise.*

I Say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witnesse in the holy Ghost,

2 That I have great heavinesse and continuall sorrow in my heart.

3 For I could wish that my self were accursed from Christ, for my brethren my kinsmen according to the flesh:

4 Who are Israelites: to whom *pertaineth* ℈ adoption, & the glory, & the covenants, and the giving of the law, & the service *of God*, and the promises

5 Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ *came*, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen

6 Not as though ℈ word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, ẅ are of Israel,

7 Neither because they are ℈ seed of Abraham, *are they* al children: but in Isaac shal thy seed be caled

8 That *is*, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

9 For this is the word of promise, At this time will I come, and Sara shall have a son.

10 And not only *this*, but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, *even* by our father Isaac.

11 (For *the children* being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth)

12 It was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger.

13 As it is written, Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.

14 What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousnesse with God? God forbid.

15 For he saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom

whom I will have mercy, and I will have com-
passion on whom I will have compassion.

16 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of
him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

17 For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, Even
for this same purpose have I raised thee up that I
might shew my power in thee, and that my name
might be declared throughout all the earth.

18 Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will
have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he
yet finde fault? For who hath resisted his will?

20 Nay but O man, who art thou that repliest
against God? shall the thing formed say to him
that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

21 Hath not the potter power over the clay,
of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour
and another unto dishonour?

22 What if God willing to shew his wrath & to
make his power known, endured with much long-
suffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction:

23 And that he might make known the riches
of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had
afore Prepared unto glory?

24 Even us whom he hath called, not of the
Jews only but also of the Gentiles.

25 As he saith also in Osee, I will call them
my people, which were not my people: and her,
beloved, which was not beloved.

26 And it shall come to passe, that in the place where
it was said unto them, Ye are not my people, there
shall they be called the children of the living God.

27 Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though
the number of the children of Israel be as the
sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved.

28 For he will finish the work, and cut it short
in righteousnesse: because a short work will the
Lord make upon the earth.

29 And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord
of sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as So-
doma, and been made like unto Gomorah.

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles
which followed not after righteousnesse, have
attained to righteousnesse, even the righteous-
nesse which is of faith.

31 But Israel, which followed after the law of
righteousnes

righteousnesse, hath not attained to the law of righteousnesse.

32 Wherefore? Because *they sought it*, not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law: for they stumbled at that stumbling stone,

33 As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and rock of offence: and whosoever beleeveth on him, shall not be ashamed.

## CHAP. X.

*5 The difference betwixt the righteousnesse of the law, and of faith*

BRethren, my hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved.

2 For I bear them record, that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of Gods righteousnesse, and going about to establish their own righteousnesse, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousnesse of God.

4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousnesse to every one that beleeveth.

5 For Moses describeth the righteousnesse which is of the law, that the man which doeth those things, shall live by them.

6 But the righteousnesse which is of faith, speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is to bring Christ down from above)

7 Or who shall descend into the deep? (that is to bring up Christ again from the dead)

8 But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, *even* in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is the word of faith which we preach,

9 That if thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, & shalt beleeve in thine heart, ℈ God hath raised him from ℈ dead, thou shalt be saved.

10 For with the heart man beleeveth unto righteousnesse, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

11 For the Scripture saith, Whosoever beleeveth on him, shall not be ashamed.

12 For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all, is rich unto all that call upon him.

13 For whosoever shall call upon the Name of the Lord shall be saved.

14 How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?

15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautifull are the feet of them that preach the Gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

16 But they have not all obeyed the Gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord who hath believed our report?

17 So then faith *cometh* by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

18 But I say, Have they not heard? Yes verily, their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world.

19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses saith, I will provoke you to jelousie by *them that are* no people, *and* by a foolish nation I will anger you.

20 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, I was found of them that sought me not: I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me.

21 But to Israel he saith, All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gain-saying people.

## CHAP. XI.

*God hath not cast off all Israel. 7 Some were elected, through the rest were hardened*

1 Say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid: For I also am an Israelite of the seed of Abraham, *of* the tribe of Benjamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wot yee not what the Scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,

3 Lord, they have killed thy Prophets, and digged down thine altars: and I am left alone, and they seek my life.

4 But what saith the answer of God unto him? I have reserved to my self seven thousand men, who have not bowed *the* knee to *the image of* Baal.

5 Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if by grace, then *is it* no more of works, otherwise grace is no more grace. But if *it be* of works, then it is no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

7 What

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that
which he seeketh for; but the election hath ob-
tained it, and the rest were blinded:
8 According as it is written, God hath give them
the spirit of slumberings, that they should not see
and ears that they should not hear, unto this day.
9 And David saith, Let their table be made a
snare, and a trap, and a stumbling block, and a re-
compense unto them.
10 Let their eyes be darkned, that they may not
see; and bow down their back alway.
11 I say then, Have they stumbled that they
should fall? God forbid. But *rather* through their
fall, salvation *is come* unto the Gentiles, for to
provoke them to jealousie.
12 Now if the fall of them *be* the riches of
the world, and the diminishing of them *the* riches
of the Gentiles; how much more their fulnesse?
13 For I speak to you Gentiles, in as much as I am
the apostle of the Gentiles I magnifie mine office
14 If by any meanes I may provok to emulation
*the* which *are* my flesh, & I might save some of the
15 For if the casting away of them *be* the re-
conciling of the world: what *shall* the receiving
*of them be* but life from the dead?
16 For if the first fruit be holy, the lump is also
*holy*: and if the root *be* holy, so *are* the branches.
17 And if some of the branches be broken off,
and thou being an wilde olive tree, were grafted
in amongst them, and with them partakest of the
root and fatnesse of the olive tree.
18 Boast not against the branches: but if thou
boast, thou beares not the root but the root thee.
19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were bro-
ken off, that I might be grafted in.
20 Well: because of unbelief they were bro-
ken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high
minded, but fear.
21 For if God spared not the naturall branches
*take heed* lest he also spare not thee.
22 Behold therefore the goodnesse and severity
of God: on them which fell, severity; but towards
thee, goodnesse, if thou continue in his goodnesse
otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.
23 And they also, if they bide not still in un-
belief, shall be grafted in: for God is able to
graffe them in again.
24 For

24 For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wilde by nature, and wert graffed contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these which be the naturall *branches*, be graffed into their own olive tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mistery (lest ye should be wise in your own conceits) that blindnesse in part is happened to Israel, until the fulnesse of the Gentiles be come in.

26 And so all Israel shall be saved, as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the deliverer, and shall turn away ungodlinesse from Jacob.

27 For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins.

28 As concerning the gospel, they are enemies for your sake: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers sakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

30 For as ye in times past have not beleeved God, yet have now obtained mercie through their unbelief:

31 Even so have these also now not beleeved, that through your mercie they also may obtain mercie.

32 For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercie upon all.

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisedome and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his judgements, and his wayes past finding out!

34 For who hath known the minde of the Lord, or who hath been his counseller?

35 Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.

## CHAP. XII.

1 *Gods mercies must move us to please him.* I Beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, *which is* your reasonable service.

2 And be not conformed to this world; but be ye transformed by the renewing of your minde, that ye may prove what is *y* good, that acceptable

lie, and perfect will of God.

3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of *himself* more highly then he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.

4 For as wee have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office:

5 So wee being many, are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

6 Having then gifts differing according to the grace that is given unto us, whether prophesie, *let us prophesie* according to the proportion of faith

7 Or ministery, *let us wait* on *our* ministring: or he that teacheth, on teaching:

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, *let him do it* with simplicity: he that ruleth, with diligence: he that sheweth mercy, with chearfulnesse.

9 Let love *be* without dissimulation: abhor *that which is* evil, cleave to *that which is* good:

10 *Be* kindely affectioned one to another with brotherly love: in honour preferring one another:

11 Not slothfull in businesse: fervent in spirit, serving the Lord:

12 Rejoycing in hope: patient in tribulation: continuing instant in prayer:

13 Distributing to the necessity of Saints: given to hospitality:

14 Blesse them which persecute you: blesse, and curse not:

15 Rejoyce with them that do rejoyce, and weep with them that weep:

16 Be of the same minde one towards another: Minde not high things, but condescend to men of low estate: Be not wise in your own conceits:

17 Recompense to no man evil for evil: Provide things honest in the sight of all men.

18 If it bee possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.

19 Dearly beloved, avenge not your selves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance *is* mine, I will repay saith the Lord.

20 Therefore if thine enemie hunger, feed him: if he thirst give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coales of fire on his head.

21 Be

21 Bee not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

## CHAP. XIII.

*1 Our duties to Magistrates. 8 Love is the fulfilling of the law.*

LEt every soule bee subiect vnto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be, are ordained of God.

2 Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receiue to themselues damnation.

3 For rulers are not a terrour to good works, but to the euil: wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt haue praise of the same.

4 For he is the minister of God to thee for good: but if thou doe that which is euil, bee afraid: For he beareth not the sword in vaine: For he is the minister of God, a reuenger to execute wrath vpon him that doth euil.

5 Wherefore ye must needs be subiect, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

6 For, for this cause pay you tribute also: For they are Gods ministers, attending continually vpon this very thing.

7 Render therefore to all their dues, tribute to whom tribute is due, custome to whom custome, feare to whom feare, honour, to whom honour.

8 Owe no man any thing, but to loue one another: For he that loueth another, hath fulfilled the law.

9 For this, thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse, Thou shalt not couet: and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

10 Loue worketh no ill to his neighbour, therefore loue is the fulfilling of the law.

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: For now is our saluation neerer than when we beleeued.

12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the workes of darknesse, and let us put on the armour of light.

13 Let us walke honestly as in the day, not in rioting and drunkennesse, not in chambering and

wantonnesse, not in strife and envying.

13 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to *fulfill* the lusts thereof.

## CHAP. XIIII.

*1 Men may not contemne nor condemne one another for things indifferent.*

HIm that is weake in the Faith, receive you, but not to doubtfull disputations.

2 For one believeth that he may eat all things: another who is weak, eateth herbes.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not: and let not him that eateth not, judge him that eateth. For God hath received him.

4 Who art thou *that* judgest another mans servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth. Yea, he shall be holden up: For God is able to make him stand.

5 One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth *every day alike*. Let every man be fully perswaded in his owne minde.

6 He *that* regardeth the day, regardeth it unto the Lord: & he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard it. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giveth God thanks, & he *that* eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not, & giveth God thanks.

7 For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himselfe.

8 For whether we live, we live unto the Lord: and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lords.

9 For to this end Christ both died and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.

10 But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? we shall all stand before the judgement seat of Christ.

11 For it is written, As I live saith the Lord, every knee shall bowe to me, and every tongue shall confesse to God.

12 So then every one of us shall give account of himselfe to God.

13 Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling blocke, or an occasion to fall in his brothers way.

14 I know, and am perswaded by the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing unclean of it selfe: but to

him

him that esteemeth any thing to be unclean, to him it is unclean.

15 But if thy brother be grieved with thy meat, now walkest thou not charitably. Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died.

16 Let not then your good be evil spoken of.

17 For the kingdome of God is not meat and drinke, but righteousnesse and peace, and joy in the holy Ghost.

18 For he that in these things serveth Christ, is acceptable to God, and approved of men.

19 Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edifie another.

20 For meat destroy not the worke of God. All things indeed are pure, but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence.

21 It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drinke wine, nor *anything* whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weake.

22 Hast thou Faith? have it to thy selfe before God. Happie is he that condemneth not himself *in that thing* which hee alloweth.

23 And he that doubteth is damned, if he eate, because *he eateth* not of Faith: For whatsoever is not of Faith, is sin.

## CHAP. XV.

1 *The strong must beare with the weake.*

WE then † are strong, ought to beare † infirmities of the weak & not to please our selves

2 Let every one of us please his neighbour for *his* good to edification.

3 For even Christ pleased not himself, but as it is written, The reproches of them that reproched thee fell on me.

† 4 For whatsoever things were written aforetime, were written for our learning, † we through patience & comfort of the scriptures might have hope.

5 Now the God of patience and consolation, grant you to be like minded one towards another, according to Christ Jesus.

6 That ye may with one mind & one mouth glorifie God, even † Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also received us, to the glory of God.

8 Now I say, that Jesus Christ was a minister of

the circumcision for the truth of God to confirm the promise made unto the Fathers,

9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God for his mercy, as it is written, For this cause I will confesse to thee among the Gentiles, & sing unto thy Name.

10 And again he saith, Rejoyce yee Gentiles with his people.

11 And again, Praise the Lord all ye Gentiles, and laud him all yee people.

12 And again Esaias saith, There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall arise to reigne over the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that yee may abound in hope through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my self also am perswaded of you my brethren, that ye also are full of goodnes, filled with all knowledge able also to admonish one another.

15 Nevertheles, brethren, I have written the more boldly unto you in some sort, as putting you in minde, because of the grace that is given to mee of God.

16 That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministring the gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles might bee acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

17 I have therefore whereof I may glory through Jesus Christ, in those things which pertain to God.

18 For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by mee, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed.

19 Through mighty signes and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God, so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so have I striven to preach the gospel, where Christ was named, lest I should build upon another mans foundation.

21 But as it is written, To whom hee was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that have not heard, shall understand.

22 For which cause also I have been much hindered from coming to you.

23 But now having no more place in those parts, having a great desire these many yeares to come to you:

24 When

24 Whensoeuer I take my iourney into Spain, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my iourney, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled with your company.

25 But now I goe vnto Ierusalem, to minister vnto the Saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certain contribution for the poore Saints which are at Ierusalem.

27 It hath pleased them verily, and their debters they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spirituall things, their duty is also to minister vnto them in carnall things.

28 When therefore I have performed this, and have sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spaine.

29 And I am sure that when I come vnto you, I shall come in the fulnesse of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ.

30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for ℣ Lord Iesus Christs sake, & for ℣ loue of the Spirit ℣ ye striue together with me, in your prayers to God for me

31 That I may be delivered from them that doe not beleeue in Iudea; and that my service which I have for Ierusalem, may be accepted of the Saints

32 That I may come vnto you with ℣ by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

## CHAP. XVI.

*3 Paul sendeth greetings. 21 His thanks to God.*

I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a seruant of the Church which is at Cenchrea:

2 That ye receiue her in the Lord as becometh Saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoeuer businesse shee hath need of you: For shee hath been a succourer of many, and of my selfe also.

3 Greet Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Iesus:

4 (Who have for my life laid down their own necks: vnto whom not only I giue thanks, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles)

5 Likewise greet the Church that is in their house. Salute my welbeloved Epenetus, who is the first fruits of Achaia vnto Christ.

6 Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on vs.

7 Salute Andronicus and Iunia my kinsmen and my

my fellow-prisoners, who are of note among the Apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbane our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.

10 Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus houshold.

11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greet them ¶ be of the houshold of Narcissus, which are in ¶ Lord.

12 Salute Trophena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved persis, which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus & Julia, Nereus, & his sister, and Olympas, & all ¶ Saints which are with them

16 Salute one another with an holy kisse. The Churches of Christ salute you.

17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences, contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned, and avoid them.

18 For they that are such, serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly, and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil.

20 And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

21 Timotheus my work-fellow, and Lucius and Jason and Sosipater my kinsmen salute you.

22 I Tertius, who wrote this Epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole Church saluteth you. Erastus the Chamberlain of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

25 Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ (according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began,

26 But

as Barnow is made manifeſt, and by the Scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlaſting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of Faith)

27 To God only wiſe, be glory through Jeſus Chriſt for ever. Amen.

¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinthus & ſent by Phebe ſervant of the Church at Cenchrea.

## ¶ The firſt Epiſtle of Paul the Apoſtle to the Corinthians.

### CHAP. I.

1 *After his ſalutation and thankſgiving, 10 he exhorteth to unitie. 18 God deſtroyeth the wiſedome of the wiſe.*

PAul, called *to be* an Apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt through the will of God, and Soſthenes our brother.

2 Unto the Church of God, which is at Corinth, to them that are ſanctified in Chriſt Jeſus, called to *be* Saints, with all that in every place call upon the Name of Jeſus Chriſt our Lord, both theirs and ours.

3 Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

4 I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jeſus Chriſt.

5 That in every thing ye are enriched by him in all utterance, and in all knowledge:

6 Even as the teſtimony of Chriſt was confirmed in you.

7 So that ye come behinde in no gift, waiting for the comming of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

8 Who ſhal alſo confirm you unto the end, *that ye* may be blamles in the day of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

9 God is faithfull by whom ye were called unto the ſellowſhip of his Son Jeſus Chriſt our Lord.

10 Now I beſeech you, brethren by the Name of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, that yee all ſpeak the ſame thing, and that there be no diviſions among you: but that yee bee perfectly joyned together in the ſame minde, and in the ſame judgement.

11 For it hath bene declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the houſe of Cloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I ſay, that every one of you ſaith: I

am of Paul, and I of Apollo, and I of Cephas, and I of Christ.

13 Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

14 I thanke God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius.

15 Lest any should say, that I had baptized in mine owne name.

16 And I baptized also the houshold of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the crosse of Christ should be made of none effect.

18 For the preaching of the crosse is to them that perish, foolishnesse: but unto us which are saved, it is the power of God.

19 For it is written, I will destroy the wisedome of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent.

20 Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisedome of this world?

21 For after that in the wisedome of God the world by wisedome knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishnesse of preaching to save them that beleeve.

22 For the Jews require a signe, and the Greeks seeke after wisedome.

23 But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling block, & unto the Greeks foolishnesse;

24 But unto them which are called both Jews and Greeks, Christ, the power of God, and the wisedome of God.

25 Because the foolishnesse of God is wiser then men: and the weaknesse of God is stronger then men.

26 For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called.

27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise: and God hath chosen the weak things of the world, to confound the things which are mighty;

28 And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, & things which are not, to bring to nought things that are:

29 That no flesh should glory in his presence.

30 But

30 But of him are yee in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisedome, and righteousnesse, and sanctification, and redemption:

31 That according as it is written, Hee that glorieth, let him glorie in the Lord.

## CHAP. II.

*1 Pauls preaching. 6 excelleth the wisdome of this world.*

AND I, brethren, when I came to you, I came not with excellency of speech, or of wisedome, declaring unto you the testimony of God.

2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.

3 And I was with you in weaknesse, and in fear, and in much trembling.

4 And my speech, and my preaching was not with entising words of mans wisedome, but in demonstration of the Spirit, and of power:

5 That your Faith should not stand in the wisedome of men, but in the power of God.

6 Howbeit we speak wisdome among them that are perfect: yet not the wisedome of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought.

7 But we speak the wisedome of God in a mystery: *even* the hidden *wisedome* which God ordained before the world unto our glory.

8 Which none of the princes of this world knew: For had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

9 But as it is written, Eye hath not seene, nor eare heard, neither hath entred into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.

10 But God hath revealed *them* unto us by his Spirit: For the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Now we have received not the Spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God, that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

13 Which things also we speak, not in the words which mans wisedome teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spirituall things with spirituall.

14 But the naturall man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishnesse unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

15 But he that is spirituall, judgeth all things, yet he himselfe is judged of no man.

16 For who hath knowne the minde of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the minde of Christ.

## CHAP. III.

*1 Of strife and division 7 God giveth the increase*

AND I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spirituall, but as unto carnall, even as unto babes in Christ.

2 I have fed you with milke, and not with meate: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither, yet now are ye able.

3 For yee are yet carnall: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnall, and walke as men.

4 For while one saith, I am of Paul, and another, I am of Apollo, are yee not carnall?

5 Who then is Paul, and who is Apollo, but ministers by whom yee beleeved, even as the Lord gave to every man?

6 I have planted, Apollo watered: but God gave the increase.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth: but God that giveth the increase.

8 Now he that planteth, and he that watereth are one: and every man shall receive his own reward, according to his owne labour.

9 For we are labourers together with God, yee are Gods husbandrie, ye are Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise master-builder I have laid the foundation, & another buildeth theron. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

12 Now if any man build upon this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble;

13 Every mans worke shall bee made manifest. For the day shall declare it, because it shall bee revealed by fire, and the fire shall try every mans worke, of what sort it is.

14 If

14 If any mans worke abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.

15 If any mans worke shall be burnt, he shall suffer losse, but he himself shall be saved: yet so, as by fire.

16 Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you?

17 If any man defile the Temple of God, him shall God destroy. For the Temple of God is holy, which *temple* ye are.

18 Let no man deceive himselfe: if any man among you seemeth to bee wise in this world, let him become a foole, that he may be wise.

19 For the wisedome of this world is foolishnesse with God: For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftinesse.

20 And again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vaine.

21 Therefore let no man glory in men, for all things are yours.

22 Whether Paul, or Apollo, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things tocome, all are yours.

23 And ye are Christs, and Christ *is* Gods.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 How to account the ministers. 7 Wee have nothing but we have received.*

LEt a man so account of us, as of ȳ ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

2 Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man bee found faithfull.

3 But with mee it is a very small thing that I should bee judged of you, or of mans judgement: yea, I judge not mine own selfe.

4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not hereby justified: but he ȳ judgeth me is the Lord.

5 Therefore judge nothing before the time, untill the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darknesse, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.

6 And these things brethren, I have in a figure transferred to my selfe, and to Apollo, for your sakes: that ye might learne in us not to thinke of men, above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.

7 For who maketh thee to differ *from another*?

and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst not receive it, why doest thou glory as if thou hadst not received it?

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, yee have reigned as kings without us, and I would to God ye did reigne, that we also might reigne with you

9 For I think that God hath set forth us the Apostles last, as it were appointed to death. For we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men.

10 Wee are fools for Christs sake, but yee are wise in Christ: we are weak, but ye are strong, ye are honourable, but we are despised.

11 Even unto this present houre wee both hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certaine dwelling place.

12 And labour working with our own hands: being reviled, we bleſſe: being persecuted, wee suffer it:

13 Being defamed we intreat: we are made as the filth of the world, and are the off-scouring of all things unto this day.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved sons I warne you.

15 For though you have ten thousand instructors in Christ, *yet have ye* not many fathers: For in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through ỹ gospel.

16 Wherefore I beseech you be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause have I sent unto you Timotheus, who is my beloved son, and faithfull in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my wayes, which bee in Christ, as I teach every where in every Church.

18 Now some are puffed up, as though I would not come to you.

19 But I will come to you shortly, if the Lord will, and will know, not the speach of them which are puffed up, but the power.

20 For the kingdome of God is not in word but *in* power.

21 What will ye? shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and in the spirit of meekenesse?

## CHAP. V.

1 *The incestuous person.* 7 *The old leaven is to be purged out.* 9 *Haynous offenders are to be avoided.*

IT is reported commonly *that there is* fornication among you, and such fornication, as is not

so

so much as named amongst the Gentiles, that one should have his fathers wife.

2 And yee are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed, might be taken away from among you.

3 For I verily as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already, as though I were present, concerning him that hath so done this deed:

4 In the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ,

5 To deliver such a one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus Christ.

6 Your glorying is not good: know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?

7 Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may bee a new lump, as yee are unleavened. For even Christ our Passeover is sacrificed for us.

8 Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickednesse: but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

9 I wrote unto you in an Epistle, not to companie with fornicatours.

10 Yet not altogether with the fornicatours of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters: For then must ye needs go out of the world.

11 But now I have written unto you, not to keep companie, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicatour, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with such an one, no not to eate.

12 For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within.

13 But them that are without, God judgeth. Therefore put away from among your selves that wicked person.

## CHAP. VI.

*1 Go not to law with the brethren: especially under infidels.*

DAre any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the Saints?

2 Doe yee not know that the Saints shall judge the

the world? & if the world shalbe judged by you, are ye unworthie to judge the smallest matters?
3 Know ye not that wee shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?
4 If then ye have judgements of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the Church.
5 I speak to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man amongst you? no not one that shall be able to judge between his brethren?
6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbeleevers.
7 Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another. Why do ye not rather take wrong? why do yee not rather suffer your selves to bee defrauded?
8 Nay, you doe wrong and defraud, and that your brethren.
9 Know ye not ỹ the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdome of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankinde,
10 Nor theeves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdome of God.
11 And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in ỹ name of the Lord Jesus, and by the spirit of our God.
12 All things are lawfull unto me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.
13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord: and the Lord for the body.
14 And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up us by his owne power.
15 Know ye not ỹ your bodies are the members of Christ? shal I then take ỹ members of Christ, & make them ỹ members of an harlot? God forbid.
16 What, know ye not that he which is joyned to an harlot, is one body? For two (saith he) shall be one flesh.
17 But he ỹ is joyned unto the Lord, is one spirit.
18 Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body: but he that committeth for-

nication,

nication, sinneth against his owne bodie.

19 What, know ye not that your bodie is the Temple of the holy Ghost *which is* in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your owne.

20 For ye are bought with a price: Therefore glorifie God in your bodie, and in your spirit, which are Gods.

## CHAP. VII.

1 *Marriage, & it a remedy against fornication.*

NOw touching the things whereof yee wrote unto mee: *It is* good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Nevertheless, *to avoid* fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.

3 Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: & likewise also the wife unto the husband.

4 The wife hath not power of her owne body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife.

5 Defraud you not one the other, except *it be* with consent for a time, that ye may give your selves to fasting and prayer, and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I speake this by permission, and not of commandment.

7 For I would that all men were even as I my self: but every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that.

8 I say therefore to the unmarried and widowes, It is good for them if they abide even as I.

9 But if they cannot containe, let them marrie: For it is better to marrie then to burne.

10 And unto the married I command, yet not I but the Lord, let not the wife depart from her husband.

11 But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or bee reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

12 But to the rest speak I not the Lord, If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, & she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him.

14 For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, & the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the

the husband, else were your children unclean, but now are they holy.

15 But if the unbeleeving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases: but God hath called us to peace.

16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt save thy husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, so let him walk: and so ordaine I in all Churches.

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not become uncircumcised: is any called in uncircumcision? let him not become circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, & uncircumcision is nothing, but ✠ keeping of the commandments of God.

20 Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called being a servant? care not for it: but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lords freeman: likewise also he that is called, being free, is Christs servant.

23 Ye are bought with a price, bee not yee the servants of men.

24 Brethren, let every man wherein hee is called, therein abide with God.

25 Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment of ✠ Lord: yet I give my judgment as one ✠ hath obtained mercy of the Lord to bee faithfull.

26 I suppose therefore ✠ this is good for the present distresse, I say, ✠ it is good for a man so to be.

27 Art thou bound unto a wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed fro a wife? seek not a wife.

28 But & if thou marry, thou hast not sinned, and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned: nevertheles such shall have trouble in the flesh: but I spare you.

29 But this I say, brethren, the time is short. It remaineth, that both they that have wives, bee as though they had none:

30 And they that weep as though they wept not: and they ✠ rejoyce, as though they rejoyced not: and they that buy, as though they possessed not:

31 And they that use this world, as not abusing it: For the fashion of this world passeth away.

32 But I would have you without carefulnesse.

He

Her that is unmarried, careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord:

33 But he ℣ is married, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife.

34 There is difference also between a wife and a virgin: the unmarried woman careth for ℣ things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body & in spirit: but she ℣ is married, careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband.

35 And this I speak for your owne profit, not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that ye may attend upon the Lord without distraction.

36 But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she passe the flower of her age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marrie.

37 Nevertheless, he that standeth stedfast in his heart having no necessitie, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart that he will keep his virgin, doth well.

38 So then, he ℣ giveth her in marriage, doth well: but he ℣ giveth her not in marriage, doth better.

39 The wife is bound by ℣ law as long as her husband liveth: but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to who she will, only in ℣ Lord.

40 But she is happier if she so abide, after my judgement: & I think also that I have the spirit of God.

## CHAP. VIII.

*1 We must abstain from meats offered to idols.*

NOw as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

2 And if any man think ℣ he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man love God, the same is known of him.

4 As concerning therefore, the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice unto idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.

5 For though there bee that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there bee gods many, and lords many)

6 But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in him, and our Lord

Jesus

Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, & we by him.
† Howbeit there is not in every man that knowledge: For some with conscience of the idol unto this houre, eat it as a thing offered unto an idol, and their conscience being weake, is defiled.
8 But meat commendeth us not to God: For neither if wee eat, are we the better: neither if we eat not, are wee the worse.
9 But take heed lest by any means this libertie of yours become a stumbling block to them that are weake.
10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge sit at meat in the idols temple, shall not the conscience of him which is weak bee emboldened to eat those things which are offered to idols?
11 And through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died?
12 But when ye sin so against the brethren and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ.
13 Wherefore if meate make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

## CHAP. IX.

1 *Paul's libertie.* 7 *Ministers live by the gospel.*

AM I not an Apostle? am I not free? have I not seene Jesus Christ our Lord? are not you my worke in the Lord?
2 If I bee not an Apostle unto others, yet doubtlesse I am to you: For the seal of mine Apostleship are yee in the Lord.
3 Mine answer to them that do examine me is this.
4 Have we not power to eat and to drinke.
5 Have wee not power to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as other Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?
6 Or I only and Barnabas, have not wee power to forebeare working?
7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his owne charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof, or who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke?
8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also?
9 For it is written in the law of Moses, Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take care for oxen?
10 Or

10 Or saith he it altogether for our sakes? For our sakes, no doubt, *this* is written: that he that ploweth should plow in hope: and that hee that thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.
11 If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnall things?
12 If others bee partakers of this power over you *are* not we rather? Nevertheless, we have not used this power: but suffer all things, lest we should hinder the Gospel of Christ.
13 Doe ye not know that they which minister about holy things, live of the things of the temple? and they which wait at the altar, are partakers with the altar?
14 Even so hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the gospel, should live of the gospel.
15 But I have used none of these things. Neither have I written these things, that it should bee so done unto me: For it were better for me to die, then that any man should make my glorying void.
16 For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: For necessitie is laid upon me, yea, woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel.
17 For if I doe this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation *of the gospel* is committed unto me.
18 What is my reward then? Verily that when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel.
19 For though I be free from all men, yet have I made my selfe servant unto all, that I might gaine the more.
20 And unto the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gaine the Jews: to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gaine them that are under the law:
21 To them that are without law, as without law (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ) that I might gaine them that are without law.
22 To the weak became I as weak, that I might gaine the weake: I am made all things to all men that I might by all meanes save some.
23 And this I doe for the gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.

24 Know ye not that they which runne in a race runne all, but one receive the prize? So runne that ye may obtaine.

25 And every man that striveth for the masterie is temperate in all things: Now they do it to obtaine a corruptible crowne, but we an incorruptible.

26 I therefore so runne, not as uncertainly: so fight I, not as one that beateth the aire:

27 But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest by any meanes when I have preached to others, I my self should bee a cast-away.

## CHAP. X.

1 *The Jews Sacraments & types of ours.*

MOreover, brethren, I would not ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the Sea.

2 And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud, and in the Sea.

3 And did all eat the same spirituall meat,

4 And did all drink the same spirituall drinke: (For they dranke of that spirituall Rocke that followed them: and that Rocke was Christ.)

5 But with many of them God was not well pleased: For they were overthrown in the wildernesse.

6 Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evill things, as they also lusted.

7 Neither bee yee idolaters, as were some of them, as it is written, The people sate downe to eate and drinke, and rose up to play.

8 Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand.

9 Neither let us tempt Christ as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents.

10 Neither murmure yee, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.

11 Now all these things happened unto them for examples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.

12 Wherefore let him that thinketh hee standeth, take heed lest he fall.

13 There hath no temptation taken you, but such as is common to man: but God is faithfull, who will not suffer you to bee tempted above that ye are able: but will with the temptation also make

a way

way to escape, that yee may be able to beare it.
14 Wherefore my deerly beloved, flee from idolatry.
15 I speak as to wise men: judge yee what I say.
16 The cup of blessing which we blesse, is it not the communion of the bloud of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?
17 For we being many, are one bread, and one body: For we are all partakers of that one bread.
18 Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices, partakers of the altar?
19 What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing?
20 But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils and not to God: and I would not that yee should have fellowship with devils.
21 Yee cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: yee cannot be partakers of the Lords table, and of the table of devils.
22 Doe we provoke the Lord to jealousie? are we stronger then he?
23 All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not.
24 Let no man seek his owne: but every man anothers wealth.
25 Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eate, asking no question for conscience sake.
26 For the earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse thereof.
27 If any of them that believe not, bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go, whatsoever is set before you, eate, asking no question for conscience sake.
28 But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not, for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake. The earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse thereof.
29 Conscience I say, not thine owne, but of the other: For why is my libertie judged of another mans conscience?
30 For, if I by grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that, for which I give thanks?
31 Whether therefore ye eat or drink, or whatsoever ye doe, doe all to the glory of God.
32 Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor

to

to the Gentiles, nor to the Church of God.

33 Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine owne profit, but the profit of many that they may be saved.

## CHAP. XI.

*He reproveth the prophaning of the Lords supper.*

BE yee followers of mee, even as I also am of Christ.

2 Now I praise you, brethren, that you remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered them to you.

3 But I would have you know, that the head of everie man is Christ: and the head of the woman is the man, and the head of Christ, is God.

4 Every man praying or prophesying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head.

5 But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered dishonoureth her head. For that is even all one as if she were shaven.

6 For if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorne: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorne or shaven, let her be covered.

7 For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, for as much as he is the image and glorie of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

8 For the man is not of the woman: but the woman of the man.

9 Neither was the man created for the woman, but the woman for the man.

10 For this cause ought the woman to have power on her head, because of the angels.

11 Nevertheless, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man: even so is the man also by the woman: but all things of God.

13 Judge in your selves: is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered?

14 Doth not even nature it self teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him?

15 But if a woman have long haire, it is a glory to her: For her hair is given her for a covering.

16 But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custome, neither the churches of God.

17 Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not, that you come together not for the better, but for the worse.

18 For

18 For first of all, when yee come together in the Church, I hear that there be diuisions among you, and I partly beleeue it.

19 For there must bee also heresies among you, that they which are approued, may be made manifest among you.

20 When ye come together therefore into one place, *this is* not to eat the Lords Supper.

21 For in eating every one taketh before other his own supper: & one is hungry, & another is drunken.

22 What, haue ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or, despise ye the Church of God, and shame them that haue not? What shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not.

23 For I haue receiued of the Lord, that which also I deliuered unto you: that the Lord Iesus, the same night in which he was betrayed, took bread:

24 And when he had giuen thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat, this is my body, which is broken for you: This doe in remembrance of mee.

25 After the same manner also *he took* the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup *is* the new Testament in my bloud: this doe ye, as oft as yee drinke it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drinke this cup, ye do shew the Lords death till he come.

27 Wherefore, whosoeuer shall eate this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord unworthily, shall bee guiltie of the bodie and bloud of the Lord.

28 But let a man examine himselfe, and so let him eate of that bread, and drinke of that cup.

29 For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himselfe, not discerning the Lords bodie.

30 For this cause many are weake and sickly among you, and many sleep.

31 For if we would iudge our selues, we should not be iudged.

32 But when we are iudged, wee are chastened of the Lord, that wee should not bee condemned with the world.

33 Wherefore my brethren, when ye come together, tarie one for another.

34 And if any man hunger, let him eat at home, that yee come not together unto condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when I come.

CHAP.

*Spirituall gifts 4 are divers. 7 yet all to profit.*

NOw concerning spirituall *gifts*, brethren, I would not have you ignorant.

2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumbe idols, even as yee were led.

3 Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the spirit of God, calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

4 Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.

5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God, which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the Spirit, is given to every man to profit withall.

8 For to one is given by the Spirit, the word of wisedome, to another the word of knowledge, by the same Spirit.

9 To another Faith by the same Spirit: to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit.

10 To another the working of miracles, to another prophesie, to another discerning of spirits, to another divers kindes of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues.

11 But al these worketh that one & the self same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will

12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: So also is Christ.

13 For by one Spirit are wee all baptized into one body, whether *we be* Jews or Gentiles, whether *we be* bond or free: and have been all made to drinke into one Spirit.

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot shal say, Because I am not ye hand, I am not of ye body: is it therefore not of ye body?

16 And if the ear shal say, Because I am not ye eye, I am not of ye body: is it therefore not of ye body?

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? if the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?

18 But now hath God set the members, every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him.

19 And if they were all one member, where were the body?

20 But

20 But now are they many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again, the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

22 Nay much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessarie.

23 And those members of the body, which wee think to bee lesse honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour, and our uncomely parts have more abundant comelinesse.

24 For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked:

25 That there should be no schisme in the body: but that the members should have the same care one for another.

26 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it: or one member bee honoured, all the members rejoyce with it.

27 Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.

28 And God hath set some in the Church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues.

29 Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles?

30 Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?

31 But covet earnestly the best gifts: And yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.

## CHAP. XIII.

*1 The excellent gifts are nothing without charity*
*13 It is preferred before hope and faith.*

THough I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become as sounding brasse, or a tinkling cymbal.

2 And though I have the gift of prophesie, and understand all mysteries and all knowledge: and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have no charity, I am nothing.

3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poore, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity it profiteth me nothing.

4 Charity suffereth long, & is kind charity envi-

 teth

charitie seeketh not it self, is not puffed up

5 Doth not behave it self unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil,

6 Rejoyceth not in iniquity, but rejoyceth in the truth.

7 Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

8 Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophesies, they shall fail; whether there bee tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesie in part.

10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I understood as a childe, I thought as a childe: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

12 For now wee see through a glasse, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part, but then shall I know even as also I am known.

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three, but the greatest of these is charity.

## CHAP. XIIII.

1 *Prophesie is commended, 2, 3, 4, and preferred before speaking with tongues, 6 by a comparison.*

FOllow after charity, and desire spirituall gifts, but rather that ye may prophesie.

2 For he that speaketh in an *unknown* tongue, speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him: howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.

3 But hee that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

4 He ℣ speaketh in an *unknown* tongue, edifieth himself: but he that prophesieth, edifieth the church.

5 I would that yee all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he ℣ prophesieth, then he ℣ speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that ℣ church may receive edifying.

6 Now brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shal speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine?

7 And even things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the sounds, how shall it bee known what is piped or harped?

8 For

8 For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battell?

9 So likewise you, except ye vtter by the tongue words easie to be vnderstood, how shall it bee known what is spoke? for ye shal speak into the aire.

10 There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in y world, & none of them are without signification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shal be vnto him that speaketh, a barbarian, & he y speaketh shall be a barbarian vnto me.

12 Even so ye, forasmuch as yee are zealous of spirituall gifts, seek that yee may excell to the edifying of the church.

13 Wherefore let him that speaketh in an vnknown tongue, pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an vnknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my vnderstanding is vnfruitfull.

15 What is it then? I will pray with y spirit, and will pray with the vnderstanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the vnderstanding also.

16 Else when thou shalt blesse with the spirit, how shall hee that occupieth the room of the vnlearned, say Amen at thy giving of thanks, seeing he vnderstandeth not what thou sayest?

17 For thou verily giuest thanks well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thank my God, I speak with tongues more then you all:

19 Yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my vnderstanding, that by my voice I might teach others also, then ten thousand words in an vnknown tongue.

20 Brethren, be not children in vnderstanding: howbeit, in malice be ye children, but in vnderstanding be men.

21 In the law it is written, With men of other tongues & other lips, will I speak vnto this people: & yet for all y will they not hear me, saith y Lord.

22 Wherefore tongues are for a signe, not to them that beleeve, but to them that beleeve not: but prophesying serveth not for them that beleeve not, but for them which beleeve.

23 If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, & all speak with tongues, and there come in those that are vnlearned, or vnbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad?

24 But if all prophesie, and there come in one that beleeveth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all.

25 And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest, & so falling down on his face, he will worship God, & report that God is in you of a truth.

26 How is it then brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a Psalme, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done to edifying.

27 If any man speak in *an unknown* tongue let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, and let one interpret.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church, and let him speak to himself, and to God.

29 Let the prophets speak two or three, and let the other judge.

30 If *any thing* be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesie one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.

32 And the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets.

33 For God is not *the author* of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.

34 Let your women keep silence in churches, for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but *they are commanded* to be under obedience, as also saith the Law.

35 And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the church.

36 What? came the word of God out from you? or came it unto you only?

37 If any man think himself to be a prophet, or spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you, are the commandments of the Lord.

38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Wherefore brethren, covet to prophesie, and forbid not to speak with tongues.

40 Let all things be done decently, & in order.

## CHAP. XV.

*Christs resurrection he proveth the necessity of ours.*

MOreover brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also

so you have received, and wherein ye stand.

2 By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain.

3 For I delivered unto you first of all, that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures:

4 And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:

5 And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve.

6 After that he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once: of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

7 After that, he was seen of James, then of all the apostles.

8 And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time.

9 For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God.

10 But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed upon me, was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.

11 Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed.

12 Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen.

14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.

15 Yea and we are found false witnesses of God, because we have testified of God, that he raised up Christ: whom he raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not.

16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised:

17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain; ye are yet in your sins.

18 Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ, are perished.

19 If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.

20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, and

become the first-fruits of them that slept.
21 For since by man came death, by man came
also the resurrection of the dead.
22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ
shall all be made alive.
23 But every man in his own order. Christ the first
fruits, afterward they that are Christs at his coming.
24 Then cometh the end, when he shall have de-
livered up the kingdome to God even the Father,
when he shall have put down all rule, and all au-
thoritie, and power.
25 For he must reigne, till he hath put all enemies
under his feet.
26 The last enemy that shalbe destroyed, is death
27 For he hath put all things under his feet: but
when he saith all things are put under him, it is
manifest that he is excepted which did put all
things under him.
28 And when all things shalbe subdued unto him,
then shal the Son also himself be subject unto him
that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.
29 Else what shall they do, which are baptized
for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? why are
they then baptized for the dead?
30 And why stand we in jeopardy every houre?
31 I protest by your rejoycing which I have
in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily.
32 If after the manner of men I have fought with
beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me, if the dead
rise not? let us eat & drink, for to morrow we die.
33 Be not deceived, evil communications cor-
rupt good manners.
34 Awake to righteousnesse, and sin not: for
some have not the knowledge of God, I speak this
to your shame.
35 But some man will say, How are the dead
raised up? and with what body do they come?
36 Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not
quickened except it die.
37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not
that body that shall bee, but bare grain, it may
chance of wheat, or of some other grain.
38 But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased
him, and to every seed his own body.
39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one
kinde of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, an-
other

other of fishes, and another of birds.

40 There are also celestiall bodies and bodies terrestriall: but the glory of the celestiall is one, and the glory of the terrestriall is another.

41 There is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the starrs: for one star differeth from another star in glory.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.

43 It is sown in dishonour, it is raised in glory: it is sown in weaknesse, it is raised in power.

44 It is sown a naturall body, it is raised a spirituall body. There is a naturall body, and there is a spirituall body.

45 And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul, the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.

46 Howbeit that was not first which is spirituall: but that *which is* naturall, and afterward that *which is* spirituall.

47 The first man *is* of the earth earthy: the second man *is* the Lord from heaven.

48 As is *they* earthy, such are they *also that are* earthy: & as is the heavenly, such are they *also that are* heavenly.

49 And as we have born the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and bloud cannot inherit the kingdome of God: neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Behold, I shew you a mystery: we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump (for *the* trumpet shall sound, & the dead shal be raised incorruptible, & we shal be changed)

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortall must put on immortality.

54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, & this mortall shal have put on immortality, then shalbe brought to passe the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.

55 O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?

56 The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law.

57 But thanks bee to God, which giveth us the victory, through our Lord Jesus Christ.

18 Therefore my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, alwayes abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

## CHAP. XVI.

*1 The brethrens wants must be relieved. 10 Timothie commended. 16 Salutations.*

NOw concerning the collection for the Saints, as I have given order to the Churches of Galatia, even so doe ye.

2 Upon the first day of the weeke, let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoever you shall approve by *our* letters, them will I send to bring your liberality unto Jerusalem.

4 And if it bee meet that I goe also, they shall goe with mee.

5 Now I will come unto you, when I shall passe through Macedonia: (for I doe passe through Macedonia)

6 And it may bee that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that yee may bring mee on my journey whithersoever I goe.

7 For I will not see you now by the way, but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarrie at Ephesus untill Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that hee may bee with you without fear: For hee worketh the worke of the Lord, as I also doe.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct forth in peace, that he may come unto mee: For I looke for him with the brethren.

12 As touching *our* brother, Apollos, I greatly desired him to come unto you, with ye brethren but his wil was not at all to come at this time: but he will come when he shall have convenient time.

13 Watch ye, stand fast in the Faith, quite you like men, be strong.

14 Let all your things be done with charity.

15 I beseech you brethren, (yee know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first fruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves to the ministery of the Saints)

16 That

16 That ye submit your selves unto such, and to every one that helpeth with us and laboureth.

17 I am glad of the coming of Stephanas and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part they have supplied.

18 For they have refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore acknowledge ye them that are such.

19 The churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the church that is in their house.

20 All the brethren greet you. Greet ye one another with an holy kisse.

21 The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand.

22 If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be anathema, Maran-atha.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

24 My love be with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen.

¶ The first epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, by Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

---

# The second Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Corinthians,

## CHAP. I.

*3 The Apostle encourageth them against trouble 12 and sheweth the sincerity of his preaching.*

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy our brother, unto the Church of God, which is at Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia.

2 Grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort;

4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we our selves are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation aboundeth by Christ.

6 And whether we be afflicted, it is for your consolation

Solation and salvation, which is effectuall in the enduring of the same sufferings which wee also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation.

7 And our hope of you is stedfast, knowing that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation.

8 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life.

9 But we had the sentence of death in our selves, that wee should not trust in our selves, but in God which raiseth the dead.

10 Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that hee will yet deliver us:

11 You also helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift bestowed upon us, by the means of many persons, thanks may bee given by many on our behalf.

12 For our rejoycing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity not with fleshly wisedome, but by the grace of God, we have had our conversation in the world, and more abundantly to you-wards.

13 For wee write none other things unto you, then what you reade or acknowledge, and I trust you shall acknowledge even to the end.

14 As also you have acknowledged us in part, that we are your rejoycing, even as yee also are ours in the day of the Lord Jesus.

15 And in this confidence I was minded to come unto you before, [you might have a second benefit

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judea.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I use lightnesse? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the flesh, that with mee there should be yea yea, and nay nay?

18 But as God is true, our word toward you was not yea, and nay.

19 For the Son of God Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, even by mee, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in him was yea.

20 For

20 For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him amen, unto the glory of God by us.

21 Now hee which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God.

22 Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreover, I call God for a record upon my soul, to spare you, I came not as yet unto Corinth.

24 Not for that wee have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

## CHAP. II.

*1 The reason of Pauls not coming. 6 Of the excommunicate person.*

BUt I determined this with my self, that I would not come again to you in heavinesse.

2 For if I make you sory, who is he then that maketh me glad, but the same which is made sory by me?

3 And I wrote this same unto you, lest when I came, I should have sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoyce, having confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart, I wrote unto you with many teares, not that you should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you.

5 But if any have caused grief, he hath not grieved me but in part: that I may not overcharge you all.

6 Sufficient to such a man is this punishment, which *was inflicted* of many.

7 So that contrariwise, ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow.

8 Wherefore I beseech you, that ye would confirm *your* love towards him.

9 For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proofe of you, whether yee be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgive any thing, I *forgive* also: *for* if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for your sakes forgave I it, in the person of Christ:

11 Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to *preach* Christs gospel, and a door was opened unto me of the Lord,

13 I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus

Titus my brother, but taking my leave of them I went from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now thanks be unto God which alwayes causeth us to triumph in Christ, & maketh manifest the savour of his knowledge by us in every place.

15 For we are unto God a sweet savour of Christ, in them that are saved, and in them that perish.

16 To the one *we are* the savour of death unto death: and to the other the savour of life unto life. And who is sufficient for these things?

17 For we are not as many, which corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God in the sight of God speak we in Christ.

## CHAP. III.

1 *The commendation of Pauls ministrie.* 6 *A comparison between the ministers of the law and the gospel.*

DO we begin again to commend our selves? or need we, as some *others*, epistles of commendation to you, or *letters* of commendation from you?

2 Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men.

3 *For as much as* ye are manifestly declared *to be* the epistle of Christ, ministred by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God: not in tables of stone, but in fleshly tables of the heart.

4 And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward.

5 Not that we are sufficient of our selves to thinke any thing as of our selves: but our sufficiency is of God.

6 Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament, not of the letter but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.

7 But if the ministration of death written and ingraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance, which glory was to be done away:

8 How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious?

9 For if the ministration of condemnation be glory, much more doth the ministration of righteousnesse exceed in glory.

10 For even that which was made glorious, had no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory that excelleth.

11 For

11 For if that which is done away was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious

12 Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainnesse of speech.

13 And not as Moses which put a vaile over his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of that which is abolished.

14 But their mindes were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same vail untaken away in the reading of the old testament: which vaile is done away in Christ.

15 But even unto this day, when Moses is read the vail is upon their heart.

16 Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away.

17 Now the Lord is that Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

18 But we all with open face, beholding as in a glasse the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 Pauls sincerity and diligence in preaching. 7 and of his troubles for the same.*

THerefore seeing we have this ministery, as we have received mercy we faint not.

2 But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftinesse, nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifestation of the truth, commending our selves to every mans conscience in the sight of God.

3 But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost.

4 In whom the God of this world hath blinded the mindes of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God should shine unto them.

5 For we preach not our selves but Christ Jesus the Lord, & our selves your servants for Jesus sake

6 For God who commanded the light to shine out of darknesse, hath shined in our hearts, *to give* the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ.

7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God and not of us,

12 We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed: we are perplexed, but not in despair:

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken: cast down, but not destroyed:

10 Always bearing about in the body, the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body.

11 For we which live, are alway delivered unto death for Jesus sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortall flesh.

12 So then death worketh in us, but life in you.

13 We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I spoken: we also believe, and therefore speak.

14 Knowing, that he which raised up the Lord Jesus, shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with you.

15 For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace, might through the thanksgiving of many, redound to the glory of God.

16 For which cause we faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

17 For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding *and* eternall weight of glory:

18 While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen, are temporall: but the things which are not seen, are eternall.

## CHAP. V.

*1 That in hope of immortall glory, 9 he laboureth to keep a good conscience.*

FOr we know, that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternall in the heavens.

2 For in this we grone earnestly, desiring to be clothed upon with our house, *which is* from heaven.

3 If so be that being clothed we shall not be found naked.

4 For we that are in *this* tabernacle do groan being burdened, not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life.

5 Now he that hath wrought us for the self same

thing

thing, *is* God, who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit.

6 Therefore we are always confident, knowing that whilest we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord.

7 (For we walk by faith, not by sight)

8 We are confident, *I say*, and willing rather to bee absent from the body, and to bee present with the Lord.

9 Wherefore we labour, that whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him.

10 For wee must all appear before the judgement-seat of Christ, that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

11 Knowing therefore the terrour of the Lord, we perswade men; but we are made manifest unto God, and I trust also, are made manifest in your consciences.

12 For we commend not our selves again unto you, but give you occasion to glory on our behalf that you may have somewhat *to answer* them which glory in appearance, and not in heart.

13 For whether we be besides our selves, *it is* to God: or whether we be sober, *it is* for your cause.

14 For the love of Christ constraineth us, because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead.

15 And that he dyed for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.

16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh, yea: though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more.

17 Therefore if any man *be* in Christ, *he is* a new creature: old things are past away, behold, all things are become new.

18 And all things *are* of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministery of reconciliation;

19 To wit, that God was in Christ reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

20 Now then we are ambassadours for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you

in Christs stead, be ye reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousnesse of God in him.

## CHAP. VI.

*1. Of Pauls faithfulnesse in his ministery.*
*14 Exhortations to avoid idolatrie.*

WE then as workers together with him, beseech you also, that ye receive not the grace of God in vain.

2 (For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation)

3 Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministery be not blamed:

4 But in all things approving our selves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

5 In stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings,

6 By Pureness, by knowledge, by long suffering, by kindeness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfeigned,

7 By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousnesse, on the right hand, and on the left,

8 By honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report: as deceivers and yet true:

9 As unknown and yet well known: as dying, and behold, we live: as chastened, and not killed,

10 As sorrowfull yet alway rejoycing: as poore, yet making many rich: as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.

11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Ye are not straitned in us, but ye are straitned in your own bowels.

13 Now for a recompense in the same, (I speak as unto my little children) be ye also enlarged.

14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelevers: for what fellowship hath righteousnesse with unrighteousnesse? and what communion hath light with darknesse?

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that beleeveth with an infidell?

16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with

with idols, for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them and walk in *them*, and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

17 Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing, and I will receive you,

18 And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almightie.

## CHAP. VII.

*1 He exhorteth to purity, and declareth what comfort he took in his afflictions.*

HAving therefore these promises (dearly beloved), let us cleanse our selves from all filthinesse of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holinesse in the fear of God.

2 Receive us, we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

3 I speak not this to condemne *you*: for I have said before, that you are in our hearts to die and live with *you*.

4 Great is my boldnesse of speech toward you, great is my glorying of you, I am filled w comfort, I am exceeding joyfull in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side; without *were* fightings, within *were* fears.

6 Nevertheless God that comforteth those that are cast down, comforted us by the coming of Titus.

7 And not by his coming only, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you when he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent minde toward me, so that I rejoyced the more.

8 For though I made you sory with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the same epistle made you sory, though it were but for a season.

9 Now I rejoice, not that ye were made sory, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sory after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing.

10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold, this self-same thing that ye sorrowed

yowed after a godly sort, what carefulnesse it wrought in you, yea, *what* clearing of your selves, yea, *what* indignation, yea, *what* fear, yea, *what* vehement desire, yea, *what* zeal, yea *what* revenge: in all things yee have approved your selves to be clear in this matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote unto you, *I did it* not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear unto you.

13 Therfore we were comforted in your comfort yea, & exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refresht by you all.

14 For if I have boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed, but as we spake all things to you in truth, even so our boasting which I made before Titus is found a truth.

15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilest he remembreth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling you received him.

16 I rejoyce therefore that I have confidence in you in all things.

## CHAP. VIII.

*1 He stirreth them up to contribute to the saints.*

MOreover brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of God bestowed on the churches of Macedonia:

2 How that in a great triall of affliction, the abundance of their joy, and their deep poverty, abounded unto the riches of their liberality:

3 For to *their* power (I bear record) yea and beyond their power *they were* willing of themselves:

4 Praying us with much intreaty, that we would receive the gift, and take upon us the fellowship of the ministring of the saints.

5 And this *they did*, not as we hoped, but first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God.

6 Insomuch that we desired Titus, that as he had begun so he would also finish in you the same grace also.

7 Therefore as yee abound in every thing, in faith, in utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us: *see* that yee abound in this grace also.

8 I speak not by commandment, but by occa-

sion

sone of the forwardnesse of others, and to prove the sincerity of your love.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, ye throgh his poverty might be rich.

10 And herein I give my advice, for this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not only to do, but also to be forward a year ago.

11 Now therefore perform the doing of it, that as there was a readinesse to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which you have.

12 For if there bee firſt a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 For *I mean* not that other men bee eased, and you burdened:

14 But by an equality: that now at this time your abundance may be a *supply* for their want, that their abundance also may bee a *supply* for your want, that there may be equality.

15 As it is written, Hee that *had gathered* much had nothing over, and he that *had gathered* little, had no lack.

16 But thanks bee to God, which put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you,

17 For indeed, he accepted the exhortatiō, but being more forward, of his own accord wēt he unto you

18 And we have sent with him the brother, whose praise is in the gospel, throghout all the churches

19 And not that only, but who was also chosen of the churches to travell with us with this grace which is administred by us to the glory of the same Lord, and *declaration of* your ready minde,

20 Avoiding this, that no man should blame us in this abundance which is administred by us:

21 Providing for honest things, not only in the sight of the Lord, but in the sight of men.

22 And wee have sent with them our brother, whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, upon the great confidence which I have in you.

23 Whether *any do enquire* of Titus he is my partner, and fellow-helper concerning you: or our brethren *be enquired of, they are* the messengers of the churches, *and* the glory of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew ye to them, and before the

Churches,

churches, the proof of your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.

## CHAP. IX.

*1 He sheweth why he sent Titus, 5 and prepareth them up to a bountifull almes.*

FOr as touching the ministring to the Saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you.

2 For I know the forwardnesse of your minde, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a yeer ago, and your zeal hath provoked very many.

3 Yet have I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should bee in vain in this behalf, that as I said, ye may be ready.

4 Lest haply if they of Macedonia come with me, and finde you unprepared, we (I we say not) you should be ashamed in this same confident boasting.

5 Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that they would go before unto you, and make up before hand your bounty, whereof ye had notice before, that the same might be ready as a matter of bounty, not of covetousnesse.

6 But this, *I say*, He which soweth sparingly, shall reap sparingly: and he which soweth bountifully, shall reap bountifully.

7 Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, *so let him give*, not grudgingly, or of necessity: for God loveth a cheerfull giver.

8 And God is able to make all grace abound towards you, that ye alwaies having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work.

9 (As it is written, He hath dispersed abroad, hee hath given to the poore: his righteousnesse remaineth for ever.

10 Now hee that ministreth seed to the sower both ministre bread for your food, and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousnesse)

11 Being enriched in every thing to all bountifulnesse, which causeth through us thanksgiving to God.

12 For the administration of this service not only supplieth the want of the Saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgivings unto God.

13 Whiles by the experiment of this ministration they glorifie God for your professed subjec-

to unto the gospel of Christ, and for your liberall distribution unto them, and unto all men.

13 And by their prayer for you, which long after you for the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift.

## CHAP. X.

*1 Paul's spirituall might and authority against all adversaries as well when he is present as absent.*

NOw I Paul my self beseech you, by the meekenesse and gentlenesse of Christ, who in presence am base among you, but being absent am bold toward you.

2 But I beseech you that I may not be bold when I am present, with that confidence wherewith I think to be bold against some which think of us, as if we walked according to the flesh.

3 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh.

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnall, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds)

5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth it self against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ:

6 And having in a readinesse to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? If any man trust to himself, that he is Christs, let him of himself think this again, that as he is Christs, even so are we Christs.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our authority, (which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for your destruction) I should not be ashamed.

9 That I may not seem, as if I would terrifie you by letters.

10 For his letters (say they) are waighty and powerfull, but *his* bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible.

11 Let such an one think this, that such as we are in word by letters, when we are absent, such *will we be also* in deed when we are present.

12 For we dare not make our selves of the number, or compare our selves with some that commend themselves: but they measuring themselves by

by

by themselves, and comparing themselves amongst themselves, are not wise.

13 But we will not boast of things without our measure, but according to the measure of the rule, which God hath distributed to us, a measure to reach even unto you.

14 For we stretch not our selves beyond our measure, as though we reached not unto you, for we are come as far as to you also, in preaching the gospel of Christ:

15 Not boasting of things without our measure, that is, of other mens labours, but having hope, when your faith is increased, that we shall be enlarged by you according to our rule abundantly,

16 To preach the gospel in the regions beyond you, and not to boast in another mans line of things made ready to our hand.

17 But hee that glorieth, let him glory in the LORD.

18 For not hee that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

## CHAP. XI.

*Pauls enforced commendation of himself, and a comparison with the other Apostles.*

WOuld to God you could bear with me a little in my folly, and indeed bear with me.

2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousie, for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

3 But I fear lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your mindes should be corrupted from the simplicitie that is in Christ.

4 For if he that cometh, preacheth another Jesus whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear *with him*.

5 For I suppose I was not a whit behinde the very chiefest Apostles.

6 But though I be rude in speech, yet not in knowledge, but wee have been throughly made manifest among you in all things.

7 Have I committed an offence in abasing my self that you might bee exalted, because I have preached to you the gospel of God freely?

8 I robbed other churches, taking wages *of them* to do you service.

9 And when I was present with you and wanted, I was chargeable to no man; for that which was lacking to me, the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied: and *in* all things I have kept myself from being burdensome to you, and *so* will I keep *myself*.

10 As the truth of Christ is in me, no man shall stop me of this boasting in the regions of Achaia.

11 Wherefore? because I love you not? God knoweth.

12 But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion; that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we.

13 For such are false Apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into Apostles of Christ.

14 And no marvell, for Satan himself is transformed into an Angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing, if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness, whose end shall be according to their works.

16 I say again, let no man think me a fool; if otherwise, yet as a fool receive me, that I may boast my self a little.

17 That which I speak, I speak it not after the Lord, but as it were foolishly in this confidence of boasting.

18 Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also.

19 *For* yee suffer fools gladly, seeing ye *your*selves are wise.

20 For ye suffer if a man bring you into bondage, if a man devoure *you*, if a man take *of you*, if a man exalt himself, if a man smite you on the face.

21 I speak as concerning reproach, as though we had been weake: howbeit wherein soever any is bold (I speak foolishly) I am bold also.

22 Are they Hebrewes? *so am I*: are they Israelites? *so am I*: are they the seed of Abraham? *so am I*.

23 Are they ministers of Christ? (I speak as a fool) *I am* more: in labors more abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent, in deaths often.

24 Of the Jews five times received I fourty stripes save one.

25 Thrise was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned,

stoned, thrice I suffered shipwrack, a night and a day I have been in the deep.

26 In journeying often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by mine own countrymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wildernesse, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren,

27 In wearinesse and painfulnesse, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakednesse.

28 Besides those things that are without, which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches.

29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not?

30 If I must needs glory, I will glory of the things which concern mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In Damascus the governour under Aretas the king, kept the city of Damascenes with a garison, desirous to apprehend me.

33 And through a window in a basket I was let down by the wall, and escaped his hands.

## CHAP. XII.

*1 He commendeth his Apostleship, not by revelation, 9 but by infirmities.*

IT is not expedient for me doubtlesse to glory, I will come to visions & revelations of the Lord.

2 I know a man in Christ above fourteen years ago (whether in the body, I cannot tell, or whether out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth) such an one caught up to the third heaven.

3 And I knew such a man (whether in the body or out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth)

4 How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.

5 Of such an one will I glory, yet of myself I will not glory, but in mine infirmities.

6 For though I would desire to glory, I shall not be a fool, for I will say the truth. But now I forbear, lest any man should think of me above that which he seeth me to be, or that he heareth of me,

7 And lest I should be exalted above measure, through the abundance of the revelations, there was

given to me a thorne in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure.

8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

9 And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: For my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christs sake: For when I am weak, then am I strong.

11 I am become a foole in glorying, yee have compelled me: For I ought to have been commended of you: For in nothing am I behind the very chiefest of the Apostles, though I be nothing.

12 Truly the signes of an Apostle were wrought among you, in all patience, in signes, and wonders and mighty deeds.

13 For what is it wherein yet were inferiour to other churches, except it be that I myself was not burdensome to you? Forgive me this wrong.

14 Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you, and I will not be burdensome to you: For I seeke not yours, but you: For the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the Children.

15 And I will very gladly spend and bee spent for you, though the more abundantly I love you, the lesse I be loved.

16 But be it so, I did not burden you: nevertheless, being crafty, I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make a gaine of you by any of them whom I sent unto you?

18 I desired Titus, & with him I sent a brother: did Titus make a gain of you? walked wee not in the same spirit? walked we not in the same steps?

19 Again, think you that wee excuse our selves unto you? we speak before God in Christ: but we for all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying.

20 For I fear lest when I come I shall not finde you such as I would, and that I shall bee found unto you such as ye would not, lest there be debates, envyings, wraths, strifes, backebitings, whispertings, swellings, tumults.

21 And lest when I come againe, my God will humble mee among you, and that I shall bewaile many which have sinned already, and have not repented of the uncleannesse, and fornication, and lasciviousnesse which they have committed.

## CHAP. XIII.

*2 He threatneth obstinate sinners. 5 He adviseth them to a tryall of their Faith.*

THis is the third time I am comming to you: in the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.

2 I told you before, & foretell you as if I were present the second time, and being absent, now I write to them which heretofore have sinned, and to all other, that if I come again, I will not spare.

3 Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mightie in you.

4 for though hee was crucified through weaknesse, yet he liveth by the power of God: For we also are weake in him, but we shall live with him by the power of God toward you.

5 Examine yourselves, whether yee bee in the Faith: prove your own selves: know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray to God that yee doe no evil, not that wee should appear approved, but that yee should doe that which is honest, though wee be as reprobates.

8 For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth.

9 For we are glad when we are weak, and ye are strong: & this also we wish, even your perfection.

10 Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being present, I should use sharpnes, according to the power which the Lord hath given me to edification, and not to destruction.

11 Finally, brethren, farewell: Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one minde: live in peace: and the God of love and peace shall be with you.

12 Greet one another with an holy kisse.

13 All the Saints salute you.

14 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the

love

love of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost bee with you all. Amen.

¶ The second *Epistle* to the Corinthians, was written from Philippi *a citie* of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

## ¶ The Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the GALATIANS.

### CHAP. I.

*¶ He wondereth that they have so soone left him, and the Gospel, 11 which he learned not of men, but of God.*

PAUL an Apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead.

2 And all the brethren which are with me, unto the Churches of Galatia.

3 Grace *bee* to you and peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ,

4 Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God, and our Father:

5 To whom *be* glory for ever and ever. Amen.

6 I marvel, that yee are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ, unto another gospel:

7 Which is not another, but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the Gospel of Christ.

8 But though wee, or an Angel from heaven, preach *any other gospel* unto you, than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now againe, If any *man* preach any other Gospel unto you than that yee have received, let him be accursed.

10 For doe I now perswade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

11 But I certifie you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me, is not after man.

12 For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught *it*, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.

13 For yee have heard of my conversation in

time past in the Jewes religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the Church of God, and wasted it:

14 And profited in the Jews religion, above many my equals in mine owne nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

15 But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mothers wombe, & called me by his grace

16 To reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the heathen: immediatly I conferred not with flesh and blood:

17 Neither went I up to Jerusalem, to them which were Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and returned againe unto Damascus.

18 Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem, to see Peter, & abode with him fifteen dayes.

19 But other of the Apostles saw I none, save James the Lords brother.

20 Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not.

21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia.

22 And was unknown by face unto the Churches of Judea, which were in Christ.

23 But they had heard only, That he which persecuted us in times past, now preacheth the Faith which once he destroyed.

24 And they glorified God in me.

## CHAP. II.

*24 Of iustification by faith and not by workes.*

THen fourteene yeares after, I went up againe to Jerusalem, with Barnabas, and tooke Titus with me also.

2 And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them which were of reputation, lest by any meanes I should run, or had run in vaine.

3 But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greeke, was compelled to be circumcised:

4 And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our libertie, which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage:

5 To whom we gave place by subjection, no not for an houre, that the truth of the gospel might continue with you.

6 But

6 But of these, who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me; God accepteth no mans person) for they who seemed *to be somewhat*, in conference added nothing to me.

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter.

8 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles:)

9 And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that we *should go* unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.

10 Only *they would* that we should remember the poore, the same which I also was forward to do.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to ȳ face, because he was to be blamed.

12 For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he with-drew, and separated himself, fearing them *which were* of the circumcision.

13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation.

14 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly, according to the truth of the Gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as doe the Jews?

15 We *who are* Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the Faith of Jesus Christ, even wee have believed in Jesus Christ, that wee might bee justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: For by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

17 But if while we seek to be justified by Christ, we our selves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.

18 For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make my selfe a transgressour.

19 For I through the law am dead vnto the law, that I might liue vnto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ: Neuertheless I liue, yet not I, but Christ liueth in me: and the life which I now liue in the flesh, I liue by the faith of the Sonne of God, who loued me, and gaue himself for me.

21 I doe not frustrate the grace of God: For if righteousnesse came by the law, then Christ is dead in vaine.

## CHAP. III.

6 They that beleeue are iustified with Abraham;

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Iesus Christ hath beene euidently set forth, crucified among you?

2 This only would I learne of you, Receiued ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of Faith?

3 Are yee so foolish? hauing begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?

4 Haue ye suffered so many things in vaine? if it be yet in vaine.

5 He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doth hee it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of Faith?

6 Euen as Abraham beleeued God, and it was accounted to him for righteousnesse.

7 Know yee therefore, that they which are of Faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

8 And the Scripture foreseeing that God would iustifie the heathen through Faith, preached before the gospel vnto Abraham, *saying*, In thee shall all nations be blessed.

9 So then they which bee of Faith are blessed with faithfull Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the works of the law, are vnder the curse: For it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the booke of the law to do them.

11 But that no man is iustified by the law in the sight of God, it is euident: For, The iust shall liue by Faith.

12 And the law is not of Faith: but, the man that doth them shall liue in them.

13 Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: For it is written,

Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree.

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through Faith.

15 Brethren, I speak after the manner of men: though it bee but a mans covenant, yet if it bee confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto.

16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds as of many: but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.

17 And this I say, That the covenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law which was foure hundreth and thirtie years after, cannot disannull, that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come, to whom the promise was made, and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a Mediatour.

20 Now a Mediatour is not a Mediatour of one, but God is one.

21 Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: For if there had beene a law given which could have given life, verily righteousnesse should have beene by the law.

22 But the Scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by Faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that beleeve.

23 But before Faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the Faith, which should afterwards be revealed.

24 Wherefore the law was our schoole-master to bring us to Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

25 But after that Faith is come, wee are no longer under a schoole-master.

26 For ye are the children of God by Faith in Christ Jesus.

27 For as many of you as have beene baptized into Christ, have put on Christ.

28 There is neither Jew, nor Greeke, there is neither bond or free, there is neither male nor female: For ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

29 And if ye be Christs, then are yee Abrahams seed, and heirs according to the promise.

2 We were under the law till Christ came.

NOw I say, That the heir, as long as he is a childe, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all.

2 But is under tutors and governours, untill the time appointed of the father.

3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world:

4 But when the fulnesse of the time was come, God sent forth his Son made of a woman, made under the law.

5 To redeeme them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sonnes.

6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a sonne: and if a sonne, then an heir of God through Christ.

8 Howbeit, then when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods.

9 But now after that yee have knowne God, or rather are knowne of God, how turne ye again to the weake and beggerly elements, whereunto yee desire again to bee in bondage?

10 Ye observe dayes, and moneths, and times, and yeares.

11 I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vaine.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am; for I am as ye are, ye have not injured me at all.

13 Ye know how through infirmitie of the flesh I preached the gospel unto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh, ye despised not, nor rejected, but received me as an angel of God, even as Christ Jesus.

15 Where is then the blessednesse you spake of? For I bear you record, that if it had been possible, ye would have plucked out your owne eyes and have given them to me.

16 Am I therefore become your enemie, because I tell you the truth?

17 They zealously affect you, but not well; yea they would exclude you, that you might affect them.

18 But

18 But it is good to bee zealously affected al-
wayes in a good thing, and not only when I am
present with you.

19 My little children, of whom I travail in
birth again untill Christ be formed in you

20 I desire to be present with you now, and to
change my voice, for I stand in doubt of you.

21 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law,
doe ye not heare the law?

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sonst
the one by a bond-maid, the other by a free woma

23 But hee who was of the bond-woman, was
borne after the flesh: but hee of the free-woman
was by promise.

24 Which things are an allegorie; for these are
the two covenants, the one from the mount Sinai,
which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.

25 For this Agar is mount Sinai, in Arabia, and
answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in
bondage with her children.

26 But Jerusalem which is above is free, which
is the mother of us all.

27 For it is written, Rejoyce thou barren that
bearest not, break forth and cry, thou that travai-
lest not: For the desolate hath many moe chil-
dren then she which hath an husband,

28 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the chil-
dren of promise.

29 But as then he that was borne after the flesh,
persecuted him that was borne after the Spirit,
even so it is now.

30 Neverthelesse, what saith the Scripture?
Cast out the bond-woman and her son: For the
son of the bond-woman shall not be heir with the
son of the free-woman.

31 So then, brethren, we are not children of the
bond-woman, but of the free.

## CHAP. V.

*1 He moveth them to stand in their libertie, 3 and not to observe circumcision; 13 but rather love.*

STand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith
Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled
again with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if yee bee
circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

3 For I testifie again to every man ⅓ is circum-

cised, that hee is a debtour to doe the whole law.

4 Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousnesse by Faith.

6 For in Jesus Christ, neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but Faith which worketh by love.

7 Ye did run well, who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the truth?

8 This perswasion *cometh* not of him that calleth you.

9 A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.

10 I have confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded; but hee that troubleth you, shall beare *his* judgement, whosoever he be.

11 And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why doe I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the crosse ceased.

12 I would they were even cut off which trouble you.

13 For brethren, ye have beene called unto liberties: only *use* not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.

14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, *even* in this: Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy selfe.

15 But if ye bite and devoure one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.

16 This I say then, Walke in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lusts of the flesh.

17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot doe the things that ye would.

18 But if yee be led by the Spirit, yee are not under the law.

19 Now the workes of the flesh are manifest, which are *these*, Adulterie, fornication, uncleannesse, lasciviousnesse,

20 Idolatrie, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,

21 Envyings, murders, drunkennesse, revilings, and such like of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which

doe

doe such things, shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentlenesse, goodnesse, faith.

23 Meeknesse, temperance: against such there is no law.

24 And they that are Christs, have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts.

25 If wee live in the Spirit, let us also walke in the Spirit.

26 Let us not be desirous of vaine glorie, provoking one another, envying one another.

## CHAP. VI.

*1 He moveth them to deal mildely with a brother that hath slipt 6 to be liberall to their teachers.*

BRethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, yee which are spirituall, restore such an one in the spirit of meeknesse, considering thy selfe lest thou also be tempted.

2 Beare ye one anothers burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.

3 For if a man thinke himselfe to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himselfe.

4 But let every man prove his own worke, and then shall hee have rejoycing in himselfe alone, and not in another.

5 For every man shall bear his owne burden.

6 Let him that is taught in the word, communicate unto him that teacheth, in all good things.

7 Bee not deceived, God is not mocked: For whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.

8 For hee that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption: but hee that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

9 And let us not bee weary in well doing: For in due season, we shall reap, if we faint not.

10 As wee have therefore opportunitie, let us doe good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the houshold of Faith.

11 Yee see how large a letter I have written unto you with mine owne hand.

12 As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constraine you to bee circumcised: only lest they should suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.

11 For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law, but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I should glory, save in the crosse of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.

15 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walke according to this rule, peace bee on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

17 From hence-forth let no man trouble me, for I bear in my body the markes of the Lord Jesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Unto the Galatians, written from Rome.

## ¶ The Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Ephesians.

### CHAP. I.

*¶ Of our election, & and adoption, 11 which is the fountaine of salvation.*

PAul an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the Saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithfull in Christ Jesus:

2 Grace *be* to you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God, and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spirituall blessings in heavenly places in Christ:

4 According as he hath chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that wee should bee holy, and without blame before him in love:

5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himselfe, according to the good pleasure of his will:

6 To the praise of the glorie of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved.

7 In whom wee have redemption through his bloud, the forgivenesse of sins, according to the riches of his grace.

8 Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisedome and prudence;

9 Having

9 Having made known unto us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure, which hee hath purposed in himself.

10 That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of times, he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth, even in him:

11 In whom also wee have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him, who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:

12 That we should be to the praise of his glorie, who first trusted in Christ.

13 In whom ye also trusted after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that yee beleeved, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise.

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, until the redemption of the purchased possession unto the praise of his glorie.

15 Wherefore I also, after I heard of your Faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the Saints,

16 Cease not to give thankes for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glorie, may give unto you the Spirit of wisedome and revelation, in the knowledge of him:

18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened: that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the Saints:

19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power to us-ward who beleeve, according to the working of his mighty power:

20 Which he wrought in Christ when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,

21 Farabove all principalitie, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come:

22 And hath put all things under his feet, and give him to bee the head over all things to the Church,

23 Which

23 Which is his body, the fulneſſe of him that fulfilleth all in all.

## CHAP. II.

*1 What we were 3 by nature, and what we are 5 by grace. 10 We are created unto good works.*

1 And you *hath he quickned* who were dead in treſpaſſes and ſinſ,

2 Wherein in time paſt yee walked according to the courſe of this world, according to the prince of the power of the aire, the ſpirit that now worketh in the children of diſobedience.

3 Amongſt whom alſo wee all had our converſation in times paſt, in the luſts of our fleſh, fulfilling the deſires of the fleſh, and of the minde, and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

4 But God who is rich in mercie, for his great love wherewith he loved us,

5 Even when we were dead in ſins hath quickned us together with Chriſt, (by grace yee are ſaved)

6 And hath raiſed *us* up together, and made *us* ſit together in heavenly places in Chriſt Jeſus.

7 That in the ages to come he might ſhew the exceeding riches of his grace, in *his* kindneſſe towards us, through Chriſt Jeſus.

8 For by grace are ye ſaved through faith, and that not of your ſelves: *it is* the gift of God:

9 Not of works, leſt any man ſhould boaſt:

10 For wee are his workmanſhip, created in Chriſt Jeſus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we ſhould walke in them.

11 Wherefore remember that yee *being* in time paſſed Gentiles in the fleſh, who are called uncircumciſion by that which is called the circumciſion in the fleſh made by hands,

12 That at that time yee were without Chriſt, being aliens from the common wealth of Iſrael, and ſtrangers from the covenants of promiſe, having no hope, and without God in the world.

13 But now in Chriſt Jeſus, ye who ſometimes were far off, are made nigh by the bloud of Chriſt.

14 For hee is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken downe the middle wall of partition betweene us:

15 Having abolished in his fleſh the enimitie, even the law of commandments, *contained* in or-

dinances; for to make in himselfe, of twaine, one new man, so making peace.

16 And that hee might reconcile both unto God in one body by the crosse, having slaine the enmity thereby:

17 And came, and preached peace to you, *which were* afar off, and to them that were nigh.

18 For through him we both have an accesse by one Spirit unto the Father.

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and forreinners, but fellow-citizens with the Saints, and of the houshold of God:

20 And are built upon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Jesus Christ himselfe being the chiefe corner-stone.

21 In whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord.

22 In whom you also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

## CHAP. III.

*5 The hidden mystery, 6 that the Gentiles should be saved: 8 this was Paul to preach.*

FOr this cause, I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles.

2 If yee have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is given me to you ward:

3 How that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery, (as I wrote afore in few words,

4 Whereby when ye read, yee may understand my knowledge in the mysterie of Christ)

5 Which in other ages was not made knowne unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his Apostles and prophets by the Spirit:

6 That the Gentiles should be fellow-heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel:

7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me, by the effectuall working of his power.

8 Unto me, who am lesse then the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ.

9 And to make all men see, what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world, hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:

10 To the intent that now unto the principalities & powers in heavenly places, might be known by the Church the manifold wisedome of God,

11 According to the eternall purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord:

12 In whom we have boldnesse and accesse with confidence by the faith of him.

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

14 For this cause I bowe my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,

15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named,

16 That he would grant you according to the riches of his glorie, to bee strengthened with might, by his Spirit in the inner man:

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by Faith, that ye being rooted and grounded in love,

18 May be able to comprehend with all Saints, what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height:

19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulnesse of God.

20 Now unto him that is able to doe exceeding abundantly above all that we aske or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

21 Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus, throughout all ages, world without end, Amen.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 He exhorteth to unity. 14 To put on the new man 25 To cast off lying, and corrupt communication.*

I Therefore the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,

2 With all lowlinesse and meekenesse, with long-suffering, forbearing one another in love.

3 Endevouring to keep the unitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 *There is* one body, and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling.

5 One Lord, one faith, one baptisme.

6 One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Where-

8 Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on
high he led captivity captive, and gave gifts un-
to men.

9 (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he
also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?
10 He that descended, is the same also that ascended up
far above all heavens, that he might fill all things.)

11 And he gave some, Apostles; and some pro-
phets; and some, Evangelists; and some, Pastours
and teachers;

12 For the perfecting of the Saints, for the
worke of the ministery, for the edifying of the
body of Christ.

13 Till we all come in the unity of the Faith,
and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a
perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of
the fulnesse of Christ:

14 That we henceforth be no more children, tos-
sed to and fro, and carried about with every winde
of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craf-
tinesse, whereby they lye in wait to deceive;

15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow
up into him in all things, which is the head, even
Christ:

16 From whom the whole body fitly joyned toge-
ther, and compacted by that which every joynt
supplieth, according to the effectuall working in
the measure of every part, maketh increase of the
body, unto the edifying of it selfe in love.

17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord,
that ye henceforth walke not as other Gentiles
walke in the vanitie of their minde,

18 Having the understanding darkened, being
alienated from the life of God, through the ig-
norance that is in them, because of the blindnesse
of their heart:

19 Who being past feeling, have given them-
selves over unto lasciviousnesse, to worke all un-
cleannesse with greedinesse.

20 But ye have not so learned Christ:

21 If so be that ye have heard him, and have
been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus:

22 That ye put off concerning the former con-
versation, the old man, which is corrupt accord-
ing to the deceitfull lusts;

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your mind;

24 And

24 And that ye put on the new man which after God is created in righteousnesse, and true holinesse.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: For we are members one of another.

26 Be ye angry, and sin not, let not the sun goe downe upon your wrath:

27 Neither give place to the devil.

28 Let him that stole, steale no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that hee may have to give to him that needeth.

29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitternesse, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil-speaking be put away from you, with all malice.

32 And bee yee kinde one to another, tender hearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christs sake hath forgiven you.

## CHAP. V.

1 *He exhorteth to love:* 3 *and to flee fornication.*

BE yee therefore followers of God, as deare children,

2 And walke in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himselfe for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet smelling savour.

3 But fornication, and all uncleannesse, or covetousnesse, let it not be once named amongst you, as becommeth Saints:

4 Neither filthinesse, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thankes.

5 For this ye know, that no whore monger, nor uncleane person, nor covetous man who is an idolater, hath any inheritance, in the kingdome of Christ, and of God.

6 Let no man deceive you with vaine words: For because of these things, cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience.

7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

8 For yee were sometimes darknesse, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light.

9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodnesse, and righteousnesse, and truth)
10 Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.
11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitfull works of darknesse, but rather reprove them.
12 For it is a shame even to speake of those things which are done of them in secret.
13 But all things that are reproved, are made manifest by the light: For whatsoever doth make manifest, is light.
14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.
15 See then that ye walke circumspectly: not as fools, but as wise,
16 Redeeming the time, because ỹ daies are evil.
17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is.
18 And be not drunke with wine, wherein is excesse: but be filled with the Spirit:
19 Speaking to your selves in Psalmes, and hymnes, and spirituall songs singing, and making melody in your heart to the Lord.
20 Giving thankes alwayes for all things unto God and the Father, in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ.
21 Submitting your selves one to another in the feare of God.
22 Wives, submit your selves unto your owne husbands, as unto the Lord.
23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the Church: and hee is the Saviour of the bodie.
24 Therefore as the Church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their owne husbands in every thing.
25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church, and gave himself for it;
26 That he might sanctifie and cleanse it with the washing of water, by the word,
27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church: not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing but ỹ it should be holy & without blemish.
28 So ought men to love their wives, as their own bodies: he ỹ loveth his wife, loveth himself.
29 For no man ever yet hated his owne flesh:

but

the nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the Church:

30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joyned unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.

32 This is a great mystery: but I speake concerning Christ and the Church.

33 Nevertheless, let every one of you in particular, so love his wife even as himself: and the wife see that she reverence her husband.

## CHAP. VI.

*1 The duetie of children: 5 of servants.*

CHildren, obey your parents in the Lord: For this is right.

2 Honour thy father and mother, (which is the first commandement with promise)

3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth.

4 And ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

5 Servants, be obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh, with feare and trembling, in singlenesse of your heart, as unto Christ:

6 Not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart:

7 With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men:

8 Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

9 And ye masters, doe the same things unto them, forbearing threatning: knowing that your master also is in heaven, neither is there respect of persons with him.

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh and bloud, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darknesse of this world, against spirituall wickednesse in high places.

13 Where-

13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand.

14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breastplate of righteousnesse:

15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace.

16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance, and supplication for all Saints.

19 And for me, that utterance may be given unto mee, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make knowne the mysterie of the gospel.

20 For which I am an ambassadour in bonds: that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

21 But that ye also may know my affaires, and how I doe, Tychicus a beloved brother and faithfull minister in the Lord, shall make known to you all things.

22 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and that he might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

24 Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome unto the Ephesians, by Tychicus.

## ¶ The Epistle of Paul the Apostle, to the Philippians.

### CHAP. I.

*3 Paul: thankfulnesse to God for them.*

PAul and Timotheus the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the Saints in Christ Jesus, which are at Philippi, with the Bishops and Deacons:

2 Grace be unto you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 I thanke my God upon every remembrance of you,

4 Always in every prayer of mine for you all, making request with joy,

5 For your fellowship in the Gospel from the first day until now.

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good worke in you, will perfourme it until the day of Jesus Christ.

7 Even as it is meet for me to thinke this of you all, because I have you in my heart, in as much as both in my bonds, & in the defence and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Jesus Christ.

9 And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge, and in all judgement,

10 That ye may approve things that are excellent, that ye may bee sincere, and without offence till the day of Christ:

11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousnesse, which are by Jesus Christ unto the glory and praise of God.

12 But I would yee should understand, brethren, that the things which happened unto me have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel,

13 So that my bonds in Christ are manifeſt in all the palace, and in all other *places*,

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speake the word without fear.

15 Some indeed preach Christ even of envie and strife, and some also of good will.

16 The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to adde affliction to my bonds.

17 But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the Gospel.

18 What then? notwithstanding every way, whether in pretence, or in truth, Christ is preached, & I therein do rejoyce, yea, and will rejoyce.

19 For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ,

20 According to my earnest expectation, and my hope

hope, that in nothing I shall bee ashamed, but that with all boldnesse, as alwayes, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life or by death.

21 For to me to live is Christ, & to die is gaine.

22 But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose, I wot not.

23 For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to bee with Christ, which is far better:

24 Nevertheless, to abide in the flesh, is more needfull for you.

25 And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and joy of faith.

26 That your rejoycing may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me, by my coming to you again.

27 Only let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one minde, striving together for the Faith of the Gospel:

28 And in nothing terrified by your adversaries, which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God.

29 For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to beleeve in him, but also to suffer for his sake.

30 Having the same conflict which yee saw in me, and now heare to be in me.

## CHAP. II.

1 *He exhorteth them to unitie, and humilitie.*

IF there bee therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies,

2 Fulfill ye my joy, that yee bee like-minded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one minde.

3 Let nothing be done through strife, or vaine glory, but in lowlinesse of minde let each esteem other better then themselves.

4 Look not every man on his owne things, but every man also on the things of others.

5 Let this minde bee in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:

6 Who being in the forme of God, thought it not

not robbery to be equall with God:

7 But made himself of no reputation, and tooke upon him the forme of a servant, and was made in the likenesse of men:

8 And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the crosse.

9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name:

10 That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth:

11 And that every tongue should confesse, that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

12 Wherefore my beloved, as ye have alwayes obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, worke out your own salvation with feare, and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to will and to doe of his good pleasure.

14 Doe all things without murmurings and disputings:

15 That ye may be blamelesse and harmelesse, the sons of God, without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world:

16 Holding forth the word of life, that I may rejoyce in the day of Christ, that I have not run in vaine, neither laboured in vaine.

17 Yea, and if I be offered upon the sacrifice and service of your faith, I joy, and rejoyce with you all.

18 For the same cause also doe ye joy, and rejoyce with me.

19 But I trust in the Lord Jesus, to send Timotheus shortly unto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state.

20 For I have no man like minded, who will naturally care for your state.

21 For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christs.

22 But ye know the proofe of him, that as a son with the father, hee hath served with me in the gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me.

24 But

24 But I trust in the Lord, that I also myself shall come shortly.

25 Yet I supposed it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother and companion in labour, and fellow-souldier, but your messenger, and he that ministred to my wants.

26 For he longed after you all, and was full of heavinesse, because that you had heard that he had been sick.

27 For indeed he was sick nigh unto death, but God had mercy on him: and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow.

28 I sent him therefore the more carefully, that when ye see him again, ye may rejoyce, and that I may be the lesse sorrowfull.

29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladnesse, and hold such in reputation:

30 Because for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, not regarding his life to supply your lack of service toward me.

## CHAP. III.

*He warneth them of false teachers, 12 He exhorteth them to decline from carnall christianity.*

Finally, my brethren, rejoyce in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe.

2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoyce in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

4 Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more.

5 Circumcised the eight day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrewes: as touching the law a Pharisee;

6 Concerning zeal persecuting the church; touching the righteousnesse which is in the law, blameless.

7 But what things were gain to me, those I counted losse for Christ.

8 Yea doubtlesse, and I count all things but losse, for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the losse of all things, and do count them but dung that I may win Christ,

9 And be found in him, not having mine own righteousnes, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousnes which is of God by faith:

10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death,

11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead.

12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my self to have apprehended, but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behinde, and reaching forth unto those things which are before,

14 I presse toward the mark, for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

15 Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

16 Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us mind the same thing.

17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so, as ye have us for an ensample.

18 (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the crosse of Christ:

19 Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who minde earthly things.)

20 For our conversation is in heaven, from whence also wee look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ.

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby hee is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

## CHAP. IIII.

*4 Generall exhortations. 6 His joy for their liberality towards him. and Gods grace in them.*

Therefore my brethren, dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly beloved.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of the same minde in the Lord.

3 And I intreat thee also, true yoke-fellow, help those women which laboured with mee in the gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow-labourers, whose names are in the book of life.

4 Rejoyce in the Lord alway: and again I say, Rejoyce.

5 Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand.

6 Be carefull for nothing: but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known unto God.

7 And the peace of God which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.

8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report: if there be any vertue, and if there be any praise, think on these things.

9 Those things which ye have both learned and received, and heard and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 But I rejoyced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me hath flourished again, wherein ye were also carefull, but ye lacked opportunitie.

11 Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content.

12 I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: every where, and in all things I am instructed, both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.

13 I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding ye have well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction.

15 Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me, as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only.

16 For even in Thessalonica yee sent once and again unto my necessity.

17 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit that may abound to your account.

18 But I have all, and abound: I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things which were sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing to God.

19 But my God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory, by Christ Jesus.

20 Now unto God and our Father *be* glory for ever and ever. Amen.

21 Salute *every* saint in Christ Jesus: the brethren which are with me greet you.

22 All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Cesars houshold.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome by Epaphroditus.

## ¶ The Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Colossians.

### CHAP. I.

*1 He thanks God for their faith, 9 prayeth for their increase in grace, 14 and describeth the great Christ.*

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timotheus *our* brother,

2 To the saints and faithfull brethren in Christ, which are at Colosse, grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We give thanks to God, and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying always for you,

4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love which ye have to all the saints.

5 For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel:

6 Which is come unto you, as *it is* in all the world, and bringeth forth fruit, as it doth also in you, since the day ye heard *of it* and knew the grace of God in truth.

7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our dear fellow servant

servant, who is for you a faithful minister of Christ:

8 Who also declared unto us your love in the Spirit.

9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisdome and spiritual understanding.

10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord, unto all pleasing, being fruitfull in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God:

11 Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulnesse,

12 Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:

13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darknesse, and hath translated us into the kingdome of his deer Son,

14 In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgivenesse of sins:

15 Who is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of every creature.

16 For by him were all things created that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him.

17 And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the first-born from the dead; that in all things he might have the preheminence.

19 For it pleased the Father, that in him should all fulnesse dwell.

20 And (having made peace through the blood of his crosse) by him to reconcile all things unto himself, by him, I say, whether they be things in earth or things in heaven.

21 And you that were sometimes alienated, and enemies in your minde by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled,

22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable, and unreproveable in his sight:

23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and set-

God, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which yee have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven, whereof I Paul am made a minister.

24 Who now rejoyce in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behinde of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the church.

25 Whereof I am made a minister according to the dispensation of God, which is given to me for you, to fulfill the word of God:

26 *Even* the mysterie which hath been hid from ages, and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints.

27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of ỹ glory of this mysterie among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, ỹ hope of glory.

28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisedome, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus.

29 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

## CHAP. II.

*1 He still exhorteth them to be constant in Christ, 8 to beware of philosophie, and vain traditions.*

FOr I would that yee knew what great conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh.

2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mysterie of God, and of the Father, and of Christ:

3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdome and knowledge.

4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with entysing words.

5 For though I bee absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying & beholding your order, & the stedfastnesse of your faith in Christ.

6 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him:

7 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as yee have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.

8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philo-

sophie

sophie and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the God-head bodily.

10 And yee are compleat in him, which is the head of all principality and power.

11 In whom also yee are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh, by the circumcision of Christ.

12 Buried with him in baptisme, wherein also yee are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

13 And you being dead in your sins, and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses,

14 Blotting out the hand writting of ordinances, that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his crosse.

15 And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it.

16 Let no man therefore judge you in meat or in drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath dayes.

17 Which are a shadow of things to come, but the body is of Christ.

18 Let no man beguile you of your reward, in a voluntary humility, and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puft up by his fleshly minde.

19 And not holding the head, from which all the body by joynts and bands having nourishment ministred, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.

20 Wherefore if yee be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world: why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances,

21 (Touch not, taste not, handle not.

22 Which all are to perish with the using) after the commandments and doctrines of men.

23 Which things have indeed a shew of wisdome in will worship and humility, and neglecting of the body, not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

## CHAP. III.

*1 Hee sheweth where we should seek Christ, 5 He exhorteth to mortification.*

IF ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God.

2 Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth.

3 For yee are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ who is our life shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

5 Mortifie therefore your members which are upon the earth, fornication, uncleannesse, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousnesse which is idolatrie:

6 For which things sake, the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience.

7 In the which ye also walked sometime, when ye lived in them.

8 But now you also put off all these, Anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that yē have put off the old man with his deeds.

10 And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him.

11 Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision or uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bound nor free: but Christ is all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God holy and beloved) bowels of mercies, kindnesse, humblenesse, of minde, meeknesse, long-suffering:

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrell against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also *do* ye.

14 And above all these things, *put on* charity, which is the bond of perfectnesse.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts to the which also ye are called in one body: and be ye thankfull.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisedome, teaching and admonishing one another in psalmes, and hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 And

17 And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do
all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks
to God and the Father by him.

18 Wives, submit your selves unto your own
husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands, love your wives, and be not bit-
ter against them.

20 Children, obey your parents in all things;
for this is well pleasing unto the Lord.

21 Fathers, provoke not your children to anger,
lest they be discouraged.

22 Servants, obey in all things your masters ac-
cording to the flesh: not with eye-service, as men-
pleasers, but in singleness of heart, fearing God:

23 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to
the Lord, and not unto men:

24 Knowing, that of the Lord ye shall receive the
reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ.

25 But he that doth wrong, shall receive for
the wrong which he hath done: and there is no re-
spect of persons.

## CHAP. IV.

*1 Her exhortath them to be fervent in prayer,*
*5 to walk wisely toward them that are not yet*
*come to the true knowledge of Christ.*

MAsters, give unto your servants that which
is just and equall, knowing that ye also have
a Master in heaven.

2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same
with thanksgiving.

3 Withall, praying also for us, that God would
open unto us a doore of utterance, to speak the
mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds:

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to
speak.

5 Walk in wisedome toward them that are
without, redeeming the time.

6 Let your speech be alway with grace, season-
ed with salt, that ye may know how yee ought to
answer every man.

7 All my state shall Tychicus declare unto you,
who is a beloved brother, and a faithfull minister,
and fellow servant in the Lord:

8 Whom I have sent unto you for the same pur-
pose, that he might know your estate, and com-
fort your hearts:

9 With Onesimus a faithfull and beloved brother, who is one of you. They shall make known unto you all things which *are done* here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus sisters son to Barnabas (touching whom yee received commandments, if he come unto you, receive him)

11 And Jesus, which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only are my fellow-workers unto the kingdome of God, which have been a comfort unto me.

12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, alwayes labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect, and compleat in all the will of God.

13 For I bear him record, that he hath a great zeal for you, and them *that are* in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis.

14 Luke the beloved Physitian, & Demas greet you.

15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, & the church which is in his house.

16 And when this epistle is read amongst you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans: and that yee likewise read the epistle from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus, take heed to the ministerie which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians, by Tychicus and Onesimus.

---

## ¶ The first Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Thessalonians.

### CHAP. I.

*1 He sheweth his mindfulnesse of them in thanksgiving and prayer. 5 and perswasion of their sincere faith.*

PAul and Sylvanus, and Timotheus unto the church of ¶ Thessalonians *which is* in God the Father, and in the Lord Jesus Christ: grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 We

2 We give thankes to God alwayes for you all making mention of you in our prayers.

3 Remembring without ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father:

4 Knowing brethren beloved, your election of God.

5 For our gospel came not unto you in word only: but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and in much assurance, as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction with joy of the holy Ghost:

7 So that ye were ensamples to all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad, so that we need not to speak any thing.

9 For they themselves shew of us, what manner of entring in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols, to serve the living and true God.

10 And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, *even* Jesus which delivered us from the wrath to come.

## CHAP. II.

*1 How the gospel was preached unto them, and how they received it.*

FOr your selves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain.

2 But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God with much contention.

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile:

4 But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak, not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

5 For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloke of covetousness, God is witness.

6 Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you,

nor

her yet of others, when we might have been burdensome, as the apostles of Christ.

7 But wee were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children:

8 So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own soules, because ye were dear unto us.

9 For yee remember, brethren, our labour, and travel: for labouring night and day, because we would not bee chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God.

10 Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holily, and justly, and unblameably we behaved our selves among you that believe.

11 As you know, how we exhorted, and comforted, and charged every one of you, (as a father doth his children)

12 That yee would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdome and glory.

13 For this cause also thank wee God without ceasing, because when ye received ‖ word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as ‖ word of men, but (as it is in truth) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you ‖ believe.

14 For ye brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Judea are in Christ Jesus: for yee also have suffered like things of your own countreymen, even as they have of the Jews:

15 Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us: and they please not God, and are contrary to all men:

16 Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles, that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway, for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a shore time, in presence, not in heart, endevoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherefore we would have come unto you (even I Paul) once & again: but Satan hindred us.

19 For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoycing? are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at his coming?

20 For, ye are our glory and joy.

CHAP.

*1 Of Paules fruning of Timothie into them. 7 His ioy for them. 10 His desire to see them.*

WHerfore when we could no longer forbeare, wee thought it good to bee left at Athens alone.

2 And sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our fellow-labourer in the gospel of Christ, to stablish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith:

3 That no man should be moued by these afflictions: for your selues know that we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verily when we were with you, we told you before, that wee should suffer tribulation, even as it came to passe, and ye know.

5 For this cause when I could no longer forbeare, I sent to know your faith, lest by some meanes the tempter haue tempted you, and our labour be in vaine.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you vnto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye haue good remembrance of us alwayes, desiring greatly to see us, as we also to see you:

7 Therefore brethren, wee were comforted over you in all our affliction & distresse by your faith:

8 For now we liue, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can we render to God again for you, for all the ioy wherewith we ioy for your sakes before our God,

10 Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith?

11 Now God himself and our Father, and our Lord Iesus Christ direct our way vnto you.

12 And the Lord make you to increase and abound in loue one towards another, and towards all men, euen as we do towards you:

13 To the end he may stablish your hearts vnblameable in holinesse before God even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Iesus Christ with all his saints. CHAP. IV.

*1 He exhorteth them to go on in godlinesse, 6 to holinesse, 9 to loue, 11 to quietnesse.*

FVrthermore then we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you by the Lord Iesus, that as yee

haue

her yet of others, when we might have been burdensome, as the apostles of Christ.

7 But wee were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children:

8 So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own soules, because ye were dear unto us.

9 For yee remember, brethren, our labour, and travel: for labouring night and day, because we would not bee chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God.

10 Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holily, and justly, and unblameably we behaved our selves among you that beleeve.

11 As you know, how we exhorted, and comforted, and charged every one of you, (as a father doth his children)

12 That yee would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdome and glory.

13 For this cause also thank wee God without ceasing, because when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but (as it is in truth) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that beleeve.

14 For ye brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Judea are in Christ Jesus: for yee also have suffered like things of your own countreymen, even as they have of the Jews:

15 Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us: and they please not God, and are contrary to all men:

16 Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles, that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway, for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time, in presence, not in heart, endevoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherefore we would have come unto you (even I Paul) once & again: but Satan hindred us.

19 For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoycing? are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at his coming?

20 For, ye are our glory and joy.

CHAP.

*Of Paules sending of Timothie unto them. 7 His ioy for them. 10 His desire to see them.*

WHerefore when we could no longer forbear, wee thought it good to be left at Athens alone.

2 And sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our fellowlabourer in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith:

3 That no man should be moved by these afflictions: for your selves know that we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verily when we were with you, we told you before, that wee should suffer tribulation, even as it came to passe, and ye know.

5 For this cause when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some meanes the tempter have tempted you, and our labour be in vaine.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye have good remembrance of us alwayes, desiring greatly to see us, as wee also to see you:

7 Therefore brethren, wee were comforted over you in all our affliction & distresse by your faith:

8 For now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can we render to God again for you, for all the joy wherewith wee joy for your sakes before our God,

10 Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking to your faith?

11 Now God himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ direct our way unto you.

12 And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one towards another, and towards all men, even as we do towards you:

13 To the end he may stablish your hearts unblameable in holinesse before God even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints. CHAP. IV.

1 *He exhorteth them to go on in godlinesse, 6 to holinesse, 9 to love, 11 to quietnesse.*

FUrthermore then wee beseech you, brethren, and exhort you by the Lord Jesus, that as yee have

have receiued of vs how ye ought to walk, and to please God, so ye would abound more and more.

2 For ye know what commandements we gaue you, by the Lord Iesus.

3 For this is the will of God, *euen* your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:

4 That euery one of you should know how to possesse his vessel in sanctification and honour:

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, euen as the Gentiles which know not God.

6 That *no man* go beyond and defraud his brother in *any* matter, because that the Lord is the auenger of all such, as wee also haue forewarned you, and testified.

7 For God hath not called us unto uncleanesse but unto holinesse.

8 He therefore ℣ despiseth, despiseth not man, but God who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly loue ye need not that I write unto you: for yee your selues are taught of God to loue one another.

10 And indeed ye do it towards all the brethren which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye encrease more and more:

11 And that yee study to be quiet, and to doe your own businesse, and to work with your owne hands (as we commanded you)

12 That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without and that ye may haue lack of nothing.

13 But I would not haue you to bee ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, euen as others which haue no hope.

14 For if we beleeue that Iesus died and rose again, euen so them also which sleep in Iesus, will God bring with him.

15 For this wee say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are aliue and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not preuent them which are asleepe.

16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first,

17 Then we which are alive, and remain, shal be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

18 Where-

18 Wherefore, comfort one another with these words.

## CHAP. V.

1 *He sheweth of Christs second coming to judgement.* 16 *And giveth divers precepts.*

BUt of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you.

2 For your selves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night.

3 For when they shall say, peace and safty: then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with childe: and they shall not escape.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkneſſe, that that day should overtake you as a thief.

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness.

6 Therefore let us not sleep as do others: but let us watch and be sober.

7 For they that sleep, sleep in the night, and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

8 But let us who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith, and love, and for an helmet, the hope of salvation.

9 For God hath not appointed us to wrath: but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ

10 Who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.

11 Wherefore comfort your selves together, and edifie one another, even as also ye do.

12 And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you:

13 And to esteem them very highly in love for their works sake. *And* be at peace among your selves.

14 Now we exhort you, brethren, warn them that are unruly, comfort the feeble-minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men.

15 See that none render evil for evil unto any man: but ever follow that which is good, both among your selves, and to all men.

16 Rejoyce evermore.

17 Pray without ceasing.

18 In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.

19 Quench

19 Quench not the spirit.
20 Despise not prophesyings
21 Prove all things: hold fast that which is good.
22 Abstain from all appearance of evil.
23 And the very God of peace sanctifie you wholly: and *I pray God* your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.
24 Faithfull is hee that calleth you, who also will do it.
25 Brethren, pray for us.
26 Greet all the brethren with an holy kisse.
27 I charge you by the Lord, that this epistle be read unto all the holy brethren.
28 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you. Amen.

¶ The first *epistle* unto the Thessalonians, was written from Athens.

---

## ¶ The second Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Thessalonians.

### CHAP. I.

1 *Hee giveth the good opinion of their faith, love, and patience.* 11 *and comforteth them against persecution.*

PAul and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians, in God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ:
2 Grace unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.
3 We are bound to thank God alwayes for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you all towards each other aboundeth:
4 So that wee our selves glory in you in the churches of God, for your patience & faith in all your persecutions & tribulations that ye endure.
5 *Which is* a manifest token of the righteous judgement of God, ‖ ye may be counted worthy of ‖ kingdome of God: for which ye also suffer:
6 Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you
7 And to you who are troubled, rest with us

when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven, with his mighty angels,

8 In flaming fire, taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ:

9 Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;

10 When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day.

11 Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of his goodness, and the work of faith with power.

12 That the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

## CHAP. II.

*1 He willeth them to continue stedfast in the truth received, 3 sheweth that there shall be a departure from the faith.*

NOw we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him,

2 That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

3 Let no man deceive you by any means: for *that day shall not come*, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition:

4 Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.

5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things?

6 And now ye know what withholdeth, that he might be revealed in his time.

7 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth, *will let*, until he be taken out of the way.

8 And then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the

the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightnesse of his comming.

9 Even him whose coming is after the working of Satan, with all power, and signes & lying wonders,

10 And with all deceivablenesse of unrighteousnesse, in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.

11 And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie:

12 That they all might be damned, who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousnes.

13 But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth,

14 Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Therefore brethren stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle.

16 Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God even our Father which hath loved us, and hath given us everlasting consolation, and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and work.

## CHAP. III.

1 *He craveth their prayers,* 3 *testifieth his confidence of them:* 5 *prayeth for them.*

FInally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may have *free* course, and be glorified even as *it is* with you:

2 And that we may be delivered from unreasonable & wicked men: for all men have not faith.

3 But the Lord is faithfull, who shall stablish you, and keep you from evil.

4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both do and will do the things which we command you.

5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into the patient waiting for Christ.

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that yee withdraw your selves from every brother that walketh disorderly,

and

and not after y tradition which he received of us.
7 For your selves know how ye ought to follow us: for we behaved not our selves disorderly among you,
8 Neither did we eat any mans bread for nought, but wrought with labour and travail night & day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you,
9 Not because we have no power, but to make our selves an ensample unto you to follow us.
10 For even when wee were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.
11 For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busie-bodies.
12 Now them that are such we command, and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietnesse they work, and eat their own bread.
13 But ye brethren, be not weary in well-doing.
14 And if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.
15 Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.
16 Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace alwayes by all means. The Lord be with you all.
17 The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epistle: so I write.
18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

¶ The second *epistle* to the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

---

## ¶ The first Epistle of Paul the Apostle to Timothie.

### CHAP. I.

1 *Pauls charge to Timothy.* 4 *The end of the law.* 11 *Of Pauls calling.* 20 *Of Hymenem & Alexander.*

PAul an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, *which is* our hope,
2 Unto Timothie, *my* own Son in the faith: grace, mercy, and peace from God

God our Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou might'st charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither give heed to fables, and endlesse genealogies, which minister questions, rather than edifying, which is in faith: so do.

5 Now the end of the commandment is charity, out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned:

6 From which some having swerved, have turned aside unto vain jangling:

7 Desiring to be teachers of the law, understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

8 But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully,

9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawlesse and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and prophane, for murderers of fathers, and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankinde, for men stealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there bee any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine,

11 According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

12 And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled me: for that hee counted me faithfull, putting me into the ministery:

13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecuter, and injurious. But I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly, in unbelief.

14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant, with faith, and love which is in Christ Jesus.

15 This is a faithfull saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief.

16 Howbeit for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all long-suffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting.

17 Now unto the King eternall, immortall, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

18 This charge I commit unto thee, son Timo-

thie,

ihle, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest war a good warfare.

19 Holding faith and a good conscience, which some having put away, concerning faith have made shipwrack.

20 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander, whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

## CHAP. II.

*It is meet to pray and give thanks for all men.*
*9 Of women attire and behaviour.*

I Exhort therefore that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks be made for all men:

2 For kings, and for all that are in authority, that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour.

4 Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

5 For *there is* one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.

6 Who gave himself a ransome for all, to be testified in due time.

7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle (I speak the truth in Christ, and lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity.

8 I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting.

9 In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefastness and sobriety; not with broidered hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array;

10 But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works.

11 Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection.

12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve.

14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived, was in the transgression.

15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity, and holiness with sobriety.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

1 Of Bishops and Deacons, and their wives.
9 The mysterie of godlinesse.

THis is a true saying: If a man desire the office of a Bishop, he desireth a good work.

2 A bishop then must bee blamelesse, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach;

3 Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not covetous,

4 One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravitie.

5 For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shal he take care of the church of God?

6 Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil.

7 Moreover, he must have a good report of them which are without, lest he fall into reproch, and the snare of the devil.

8 Likewise must the deacons be grave, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthie lucre,

9 Holding the mysterie of the faith in a pure conscience.

10 And let these also first bee proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being found blamelesse.

11 Even so must their wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithfull in all things.

12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children, and their own houses well.

13 For they that have used the office of a deacon well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldnesse in y faith, which is in Christ Jesus.

14 These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly:

15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thy self in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

16 And without controversie, great is the mysterie of godlinesse: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of Angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.

*That in the lesser times there shall be a departing from the faith. 6 Precepts given to Timothy.*

NOw the spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils:

2 Speaking lies in hypocrisie, having their conscience seared with an hote iron:

3 Forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.

4 For every creature of God *is* good, & nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving:

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith, and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 But refuse prophane and old wives fables, and exercise thy self *rather* unto godliness.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth little: but godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.

9 This *is a* faithfull saying, and worthy of all acceptation.

10 For therefore we both labour and suffer reproch, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.

11 These things command and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophesie, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery.

15 Meditate upon these things, give thy self wholly to them; thy profiting may appear to all.

16 Take heed unto thy self, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thy self, and them that hear thee.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

§ *Rules to be observed in reproving 3 Of widows.*
17 *Of elders.*

REbuke not an elder, but intreat him as a father, and the younger men as brethren:

2 The elder women as mothers, the younger as sisters, with all puritie.

3 Honour widows that are widows indeed.

4 But if any widow have children or nephews, let them learn first to shew pietie at home, and to requite their parents; for that is good and acceptable before God.

5 Now shee that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

6 But she that liveth in pleasure, is dead while shee liveth.

7 And these things give in charge, that they may be blamelesse.

8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse then an infidel.

9 Let not a widow bee taken into the number, under threescore years old, having been the wife of one man.

10 Well reported of for good works, if shee have brought up children, if shee have lodged strangers, if shee have washed the saints feet, if shee have relieved the afflicted, if shee have diligently followed every good work.

11 But the younger widows refuse't for when they have begun to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry:

12 Having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith.

13 And withall they learn to be idle, wandring about from house to house, and not only idle, but tatlers also, and busie-bodies, speaking things which they ought not.

14 I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reprochfully.

15 For some are already turned aside after Satan.

16 If any man or woman that beleeveth have widows, let them relieve them, and let not the

church

Church be charged, that it may relieve them that are widows indeed.

17 Let the elders that rule well bee counted worthie of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

18 For the Scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corne: and, The labourer is worthie of his reward.

19 Against an Elder receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses.

20 Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear.

21 I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partialitie.

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither bee partaker of other mens sins, keep thy self pure.

23 Drinke no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomacks sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sins are open before hand, going before to judgement; and some men they follow after.

25 Likewise also the good workes of some are manifest before hand, and they that are otherwise, cannot be hid.

## CHAP. VI.

*Servants duties. 3 Avoid new fangled teachers*

LEt as many servants as are under the yoke, count their owne masters worthy of all honour: that the Name of God, and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

2 And they that have beleeving masters, let them not despise *them*, because they are brethren: but rather doe *them* service, because they are faithfull and beloved, partakers of the benefit, These things teach and exhort:

3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godlinesse.

4 He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof commeth envie, strifes railings, evil surmisings.

5 Perverse disputings of men of corrupt mindes, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain

In godlinesse: from such withdraw thy selfe.

6 But godlinesse with contentment is great gain.

7 For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certaine wee can carry nothing out.

8 And having food and raiment let us be therewith content.

9 But they that will be rich, fall into temptation, and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtfull lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the love of money is the roote of all evill, which while some coveted after, they have erred from the Faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things, and follow after righteousnesse, godlinesse, Faith, love, patience, meeknesse.

12 Fight the good fight of Faith, lay hold on eternall life, whereunto thou art also called, & hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickneth all things and *before* Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession,

14 That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, untill the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Which in his times hee shall shew, who is blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords:

16 Who only hath immortalitie, dwelling in the light which no man can approch unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom *be* honour and power everlasting. Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in this world that they be not high minded, nor trust in uncertaine riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy.

18 That they do good, that they be rich in good workes, ready to distribute, willing to communicate:

19 Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternall life.

20 O Timothie, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane *and* vain babblings and oppositions of science, falsly so called:

21 Which

21 Which some professing, have erred concerning the Faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothie was written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest city of Phrygia Pacatiana.

## ¶ The second Epistle of Paul the Apostle to TIMOTHIE.

### CHAP. I.

*1 Pauls love to Timothie, and Timothies faith.*

PAul an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus.

2 To Timothie *my* dearly beloved son: grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.

3 I thank God, whom I serve from my forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day:

4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindfull of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy.

5 When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grand-mother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am perswaded that in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stir up the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear, but of power, of love, and of a sound minde.

8 Bee not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner, but bee thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel, according to the power of God:

9 Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose & grace which was given us in Christ Jesus, before the world began:

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light, through the Gospel:

11 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an Apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things: nevertheless I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have believed, and I am persuaded that hee is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.

13 Hold fast the forme of sound words, which thou hast heard of mee, in Faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

14 That good thing which was committed unto thee, keep by the holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia, be turned away from mee, of whom are Phygellus, and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord give mercie unto the house of Onesiphorus for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chaine.

17 But when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me.

18 The Lord grant unto him that hee may finde mercy of the Lord in that day: and in how manie things he ministred unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

## CHAP. II.

*How the Lords servants ought to behave themselves.*

THou therefore my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.

2 And the things thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithfull men, who shall be able to teach others also.

3 Thou therefore endure hardnesse, as a good Souldier of Jesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth entangleth himselfe with the affaires of this life; that he may please who hath chosen him to be a Souldier.

5 And if a man also strive for masteries yet is he not crowned except he strive lawfully.

6 The husbandman that laboureth must bee first partaker of the fruits.

7 Consider what I say, and the Lord give thee understanding in all things.

8 Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David, was raised from the dead, according to my Gospel,

9 Wherein

9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an evil doer, even
unto bonds, but the word of God is not bound.
10 Therefore I endure all things for the elects
sakes, that they may also obtaine the salvation
which is in Christ Jesus, with eternall glory.
11 *If is a* faithfull saying. For if we be dead
with *him*, we shall also live with *him*:
12 If we suffer, we shall also reigne with *him*:
if we deny him, he also will deny us:
13 If we believe not, *yet* he abideth faithfull,
he cannot deny himself.
14 Of these things put them in remembrance, charging *them* before the Lord, *that* they strive not about
words to no profit, *but* to the subverting of the hearers.
15 Study to shew thy self approved unto God,
a workman that needeth not to be ashamed,
rightly dividing the word of truth.
16 But shun profane and vaine babblings, for
they will increase unto more ungodlinesse.
17 And their word will eat as doth a canker:
of whom is Hymenius and Philetus,
18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already: and overthrow the faith of some.
19 Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth
them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the Name of Christ depart from iniquitie.
20 But in a great house there are not only vessels
of gold, and of silver, but also of wood, and of
earth: & some to honour, and some to dishonour.
21 If a man therefore purge himself from
these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified
and meet for the masters use, and prepared unto
every good worke.
22 Flee also youthfull lusts: but follow righteousnesse, faith, charitie, peace, with them that
call on the Lord out of a pure heart.
23 But foolish and unlearned questions avoide,
knowing that they doe gender strifes:
24 And the servant of the Lord must not strive:
but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient,
25 In meekenesse instructing those that oppose
themselves, if God peradventure will give them
repentance to the acknowledging of the truth.
26 And that they may recover themselves out

that the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

## CHAP. III.

*1 Of the last dayes. 6 The enemies of the truth are described. 10 Paule example propounded.*

THis know also, that in the last dayes perilous times shall come.

2 For men shall be lovers of their owne selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankfull, unholy,

3 Without naturall affection, truce-breakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good,

4 Traitours, headie, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more then lovers of God;

5 Having a forme of godlinesse, but denying the power thereof: From such turne away.

6 For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts,

7 Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

8 Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the Faith.

9 But they shall proceed no further: For their folly shall be manifest to all men, as theirs also was.

10 But thou hast fully knowne my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, charitie, patience,

11 persecutions, afflictions which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra: what persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord delivered me.

12 Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution.

13 But evill men, and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them:

15 And *that* from a childe thou hast known the holy scriptures which are able to make thee wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and *is* profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousnesse:

17 That

17 That the man of God may bee perfect, throughly furnished unto all good workes.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 He exhorteth him to doe his duty with all care and diligence. 6 certifieth him of the nearnesse of his death: willeth him to come speedily unto him.*

I Charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing, and his kingdome:

2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season, reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching eares.

4 And they shall turne away their eares from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, doe the worke of an Evangelist, make full proofe of thy ministery.

6 For I am now ready to bee offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the Faith.

8 Hence-forth there is laid up for me a crowne of righteousnesse, which the Lord the righteous Judge shal give me at that day: & not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.

9 Doe thy diligence to come shortly unto me.

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica: Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

11 Only Luke is with me. Take Marke and bring him with thee: For he is profitable to me for the ministery.

12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring *with thee*, and the bookes, but especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the coppersmith did mee much evil, the Lord reward him according to his works:

15 Of whom bee thou ware also, for hee hath greatly withstood our words.

16 At my first answer no man stood with mee, but all men forsooke me: *I pray God* that it may not be laid to their charge.

17 Notwithstanding, the Lord stood with me and strengthened me, that by me the preaching might be fully knowne, and that all the Gentiles might heare: and I was deliuered out of the mouth of the lion.

18 And the Lord shall deliuer me from euery euill worke, and will preserue me vnto his heauenly kingdome: to whom *be* glory for euer and euer. Amen.

19 Salute Priscа and Aquila, and the houshold of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus haue I left at Miletum sicke.

21 Doe thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Iesus Christ *be* with thy spirit. Grace *be* with you. Amen.

¶ The second *Epistle* vnto Timotheus, ordained the first Bishop of the Church of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

## ¶ The Epistle of Paul to Titus.

### CHAP. 1.

*6 How Minister; should be qualified.*

PAul a seruant of God, and an Apostle of Iesus Christ, according to the Faith of Gods elect, and the acknowledging of the truth *which is* after godlinesse.

2 In hope of eternall life, which God that cannot lie, promised before the world began:

3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed vnto me, according to the commandment of God our Sauiour:

4 To Titus mine owne son after the common faith, grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ our Sauiour.

5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that are wanting, and ordaine Elders in euery citie, as I had appointed thee.

6 If any bee blamelesse, the husband of one wife, having faithfull children, not accused of riote, or vnruly.

7 For

7 For a Bishop must bee blamelesse, as the sto-
ward of God: not self-willed, not soon angry, not
given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre.
8 But a lover of hospitalitie, a lover of good
men, sober, just, holy, temperate,
9 Holding fast the faithfull word, as hee hath
been taught, ẏ he may be able by sound doctrine
both to exhort and to convince the gaine sayers.
10 For there are many unruly and vain-talkers,
and deceivers, especially they of the circumcision:
11 Whose mouthes must bee stopped, who sub-
vert whole houses, teaching things which they
ought not, for filthy lucres sake.
12 One of themselves, *even* a prophet of their
own, said, The Cretians are alway liars, evil beasts,
slow bellies.
13 This witnesse is true: wherefore rebuke
them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith:
14 Not giving heed to Jewish fables, and com-
mandments of men, that turne from the truth.
15 Unto the pure all things are pure, but unto
them that are defiled, and unbeleeving, is nothing
pure: but even their mind & conscience is defiled.
16 They professe that they know God: but in
works they deny him, being abominable, and dis-
obedient, and unto every good worke reprobate.

## CHAP. II.

1 *Paul directeth Titus both for his doctrine & life*
*The duty of servants, & generally of all christians*

But speak thou the things which become sound
doctrine:
2 That the aged men bee sober, grave, tempe-
rate, sound in Faith, in charitie, in patience.
3 The aged women likewise that *they be* in be-
haviour as becometh holinesse, not false accusers
not given to much wine, teachers of good things:
4 That they may teach the young women to be
sober, to love their husbands, to love their childrē
5 *To be* discreet, chast, keepers at home, good, obe-
dient to their owne husbands, that the word of
God be not blasphemed.
6 Young men likewise exhort to bee sober-
minded.
7 In all things shewing thy selfe a paterne of
good workes: in doctrine *shewing* uncorruptnesse,
gravitie, sinceritie.

7 Sound speech that cannot be condemned: that he that is of the contrary part, may bee ashamed having no evil thing to say of you.

9 Exhort servants to bee obedient unto their owne masters, and to please *them* well in all things, not answering againe:

10 Not purloyning, but shewing all good fidelitie, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

11 For the grace of God that bringeth salvation, hath appeared to all men,

12 Teaching us, that denying ungodlinesse and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world:

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ,

14 Who gave himselfe for us, that he might redeeme us from all iniquity, and purifie unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

15 These things speak and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.

## CHAP. III.

*Titus is yet further directed by Paul what to preach, & what not. 10 To reject obstinate heretics.*

PUt them in minde to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey Magistrates, to be ready to every good worke,

2 To speake evil of no man, to be no brawlers, but gentle, shewing all meekenesse unto all men.

3 For wee our selves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envie, hatefull, *and* hating one another.

4 But after that the kindnesse and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared,

5 Not by works of righteousnesse, which wee have done, but according to his mercy hee saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost:

6 Which he shed on us abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour,

7 That being justified by his grace, we should be made heires according to the hope of eternall life.

8 This is a faithfull saying, and these things I will that thou affirme constantly, that they which ha-

ave believed in God, might be carefull to maintaine good workes: these things are good and profitable unto men.

9 But avoid foolish questions and genealogies, and contentions, and striving about the law; for they are unprofitable and vaine.

10 A man that is an heretick, after the first and second admonition, reject:

11 Knowing that he that is such, is subverted and sinneth, being condemned of himself.

12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis: For I have determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the lawyer, and Apollos on their journey diligently that nothing be wanting unto them.

14 And let ours also learne to maintaine good works for necessary uses, that they bee not unfruitfull.

15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the Faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus ordained the first Bishop of the Church of the Cretians, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

## ¶ The Epistle of Paul to Philemon.

*1 Pauls joy for Philemons faith and love: 9 He desireth him to forgive Onesimus, and to receive him againe.*

PAul a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy our brother unto Philemon our dearly beloved and fellow-labourer,

2 And to our beloved Aphia, & Archippus our fellow-souldier, & to the Church in thy house

3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God, making mention of thee alwayes in my prayers,

5 Hearing of thy love and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints;

6 That the communication of thy Faith may become effectuall by the acknowledging of every good thing, which is in you in Christ Jesus.

7 For

7 For we have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the bowels of the Saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore, though I might be much bold in Christ, to enjoyn thee that which is convenient.

9 Yet for loves sake I rather beseech thee, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus Christ.

10 I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds.

11 Which in time past was to thee unprofitable, but now profitable to thee and to me.

12 Whom I have sent again: thou therefore receive him, that is mine owne bowels.

13 Whom I would have retained with me, that in thy stead hee might have ministred unto me in the bonds of the gospel.

14 But without thy minde would I doe nothing, that thy benefit should not be as it were of necessitie, but willingly.

15 For perhaps hee therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receive him for ever.

16 Not now as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, specially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?

17 If thou count mee therefore a partner, receive him as my selfe.

18 If hee hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account.

19 I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I doe not say to thee how thou owest unto me even thine own selfe besides.

20 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Having confidence in thy obedience, I wrote to thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more then I say.

22 But withall prepare me also a lodging: For I trust that through your prayers I shall bee given unto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras my fellow prisoner in Christ Jesus,

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow-labourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus a servant.

THE

## CHAP. I.

*1 Christ in these last times coming to us from the Father, 4 is preferred above the angels.*

GOD who at sundrie times and in diverse manners, spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,

2 Hath in these last dayes spoken unto us by his Son, whom hee hath appointed heir of all things; by whom also hee made the worlds.

3 Who being the brightnesse of his glory and the expresse image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himselfe purged our sins, sate downe on the right hand of the Majestie on high:

4 Being made so much better then the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name then they.

5 For unto which of the angels said hee at any time, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? And againe, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?

6 And againe, when hee bringeth in the first-begotten into the world, hee saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.

7 And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire.

8 But unto the Son *he saith*, Thy Throne, O God, *is* forever and ever, a Scepter of righteousnesse *is* the Scepter of thy Kingdome.

9 Thou hast loved righteousnesse, and hated iniquity, therefore God, even thy God hath anointed thee with the oyl of gladnesse above thy fellows.

10 And, Thou Lord in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth: and the heavens are the works of thine hands.

11 They all shall perish, but thou remainest: and they all shall wax old as doth a garment.

12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed: but thou art the same, and thy yeares shall not faile.

13 But to which of the angels said hee at any time, Sit on my right hand, untill I make thine enemies thy foot-stoole?

14 And

14. Are they not all ministring spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall bee heires of salvation.

## CHAP. II.

*We ought to be obedient to Christ Jesus, because he vouchsafed to take our nature upon him.*

THerefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip.

2 For if the word spoken by angels was stedfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompence of reward.

3 How shall wee escape if wee neglect so great salvation, which at the first began to bee spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard *him*,

4 God also bearing them witnesse, both with signes and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the holy Ghost, according to his owne will?

5 For unto the angels hath he not put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speake.

6 But one in a certaine place testified, saying, What is man that thou art mindefull of him? or the Son of man, that thou visitest him?

7 Thou madest him a little lower then the angels, thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands:

8 Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that he put all in subjection under him, hee left nothing that is not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him.

9 But now we see Jesus, who was made a little lower then the angels, for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour, that hee by the grace of God should taste death for every man.

10 For it became him for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captaine of their salvation perfect through sufferings.

11 For both he that sanctifieth, and they who are sanctified, are all of one: For which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren,

12 Saying, I will declare thy Name unto my brethren, in the midst of the Church will I sing praise unto thee,

13 And

15 And again I will put my trust in him: & again: Behold I, & the children which God hath given me.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and bloud: he also himself likewise tooke part of the same, that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil:

15 And deliver them who through fear of death were all their life time subiect to bondage.

16 For verily he took not on him the nature of angels: but he took on him the seed of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a mercifull and faithfull high priest, in things pertaining to God, to make a reconciliation for the sins of the people:

18 For in y he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

## CHAP. III.

*Christ is more worthy then Moses: 7 therefore we are the more bound to beleeve in him.*

WHerefore holy brethren partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and high priest of our profession Christ Jesus,

2 Who was faithfull to him that appointed him, as also Moses was faithfull in all his house.

3 For this man was counted worthy of more glorie then Moses, inas much as he who hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For every house is builded by some man, but he that built all things is God.

5 And Moses verily was faithfull in all his house as a servant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after:

6 But Christ as a Son over his own house, whose house are we, if wee hold fast the confidence, and the rejoycing of the hope firme unto the end.

7 Wherefore as the holy Ghost saith, To day if yee will heare his voyce,

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation in the day of temptation in the wildernesse:

9 When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works fourty yeares.

10 Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They doe always erre in their hearts, and they have not knowne my wayes.

11 So

11 So I sware in my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest.

12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

13 But exhort one another daily while it is called To day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end.

15 While it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation.

16 For some when they had heard, did provoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whom was he grieved fourty years? was it not with them that had sinned, whose carcases fell in the wilderness?

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that believed not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in, because of unbelief.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 The rest of Christians is attained by Faith. 12 The power of Gods word.*

LEt us therefore fear, lest a promise being left of entring into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.

2 For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with Faith in them that heard it.

3 For we which have believed, do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

4 For he spake in a certaine place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works.

5 And in this place againe, If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached, entered not in because of unbelief.

7 Again, he limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time, as it is said, To

day

if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts
8 For if Jesus had given them rest, then would
he not afterward have spoken of another day.
9 There remaineth therefore a rest to the peo-
ple of God.
10 For he that is entred into his rest, he also hath
ceased from his own works, as God did from his.
11 Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest
any man fall after the same example of unbelief.
12 For the word of God is quicke and powerfull,
and sharper then any two edged sword, piercing
even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit,
and of the joynts and marrow, and is a discerner
of the thoughts and intents of the heart.
13 Neither is there any creature that is not mani-
fest in his sight: but all things are naked & open-
ed unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.
14 Seeing then that we have a great high priest,
that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of
God, let us hold fast our profession.
15 For wee have not an high priest which can-
not bee touched with the feeling of our infirmi-
ties: but was in all points tempted like as wee
are, yet without sin.
16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the
throne of grace, that we may obtaine mercy, and
finde grace to helpe in time of need.

## CHAP. V.

### The authoritie and honour of Christs priest-hood

1 For every high priest taken from among men, is
ordained for men in things pertaining to God,
that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins
2 Who can have compassion on the ignorant,
and on them that are out of the way, for that hee
himself also is compassed with infirmitie.
3 And by reason hereof hee ought, as for the
people, so also for himselfe, to offer for sins.
4 And no man taketh this honour unto himself,
but he that is called of God, as was Aaron.
5 So also Christ glorified not himselfe, to bee
made an high priest: but hee that said unto him,
Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee.
6 As he saith also in another place, Thou art a
priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.
7 Who in the dayes of his flesh, when he had of-
fered

fered up prayers & supplications with strong crying and teares, unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard, in that he feared:

8 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered:

9 And being made perfect, he became the authour of eternall salvation unto all them that obey him;

10 Called of God an high Priest after the order of Melchisedec.

11 Of whom wee have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when for the time yee ought to be teachers, yee have need that one teach you againe which be the first principles of the oracles of God, and are become such as have need of milke, and not of strong meat.

13 For every one that useth milke, is unskilfull in the word of righteousnesse: For he is a babe.

14 But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good & evil.

## CHAP. VI.

*An exhortation, not to fall back from the faith.*

THerefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith towards God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptismes, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternall judgement.

3 And this will we do, if God permit.

4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightned, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost,

5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come,

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them againe unto repentance: seeing they crucifie to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the raine that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God.

8 But that which beareth thornes and briers, is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing, whose end is to be burned.

9 But

9 But beloved we are perswaded better things of you, and things that accompanie salvation, though we thus speak.

10 For God is not unrighteous to forget your worke and labour of love, which yee have shewed toward his Name, in that yee have ministred to the Saints, and doe minister.

11 And wee desire, that every one of you doe shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope unto the end.

12 That ye be not slothfull, but followers of them, who through Faith and patience inherit the promises.

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he sware by himselfe,

14 Saying. Surely, blessing I will blesse thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.

15 And so after he had patiently endured, hee obtained the promise.

16 For men verily sweare by the greater, & an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.

17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed *it* by an oath.

18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us.

19 Which *hope* wee have as an anker of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entreth into that within the vaile,

20 Whither the forerunner is for us entred, even Jesus made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

## CHAP. VII.

*1 Christ is a Priest after the order of Melchisedec.*

FOr this Melchisedec king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him:

2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all: first being by interpretation king of righteousnesse, and after that also, king of Salem, which is, king of peace.

3 Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of dayes, nor end

of

of life: but made like unto the Son of God abideth a priest continually.

4 Now consider how great this man was, unto whom even the Patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoiles.

5 And verily they that are of the sons of Levi who receive the office of the priest-hood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loynes of Abraham:

6 But hee whose descent is not counted from them, received tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction, the lesse is blessed of the better.

8 And here men that die receive tithes: but there he *receiveth them*, of whom it is witnessed that hee liveth.

9 And as I may so say, Levi also who receiveth tithes payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For hee was yet in the loines of his father when Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection were by the Leviticall priest-hood, (for under it the people received the law) what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not bee called after the order of Aaron?

12 For the priest-hood being changed, there is made of necessitie a change also of the law.

13 For hee of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar.

14 For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda, of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priest hood.

15 And it is yet far more evident: For that after the similitude of Melchisedec, there ariseth another priest,

16 Who *is* made, not after the law of a carnall commandment, but after the power of an endlesse life.

17 For he testifieth, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

18 For there is verily a disannulling of the commandment going before, for the weaknesse, and unprofitablenesse thereof,

19 For

19 For the law made nothing perfect, but the
bringing in of a better hope *did*, by the which we
draw nigh unto God.

20 And in as much as not without an oath *he*
*was made Priest*.

21 (For those *priests* were made without an
oath: but this with an oath, by him that said unto
him, The Lord sware, and will not repent, Thou
art a priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedec)

22 By so much was Jesus made a surtie of a
better Testament.

23 And they truly were many priests, because
they were not suffered to continue by reason of
death.

24 But this man, because hee continueth ever,
hath an unchangeable priest-hood.

25 Wherefore hee is able also to save them to
the uttermost, that come unto God by him, seeing
he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

26 For such an high Priest became us, *who is*
holy, harmeless, undefiled, separate from sin-
ners, and made higher then the heavens.

27 Who needeth not daily as those high priests,
to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then
for the peoples: For this hee did once, when hee
offered up himselfe.

28 For the law maketh men high priests which
have infirmitie, but the word of the oath which
was since the law, *maketh* the Son, who is conse-
crated for evermore.

## CHAP. VIII.

*By the eternall priest-hood of Christ, the Levi-*
*ticall priest-hood of Aaron is abolished.*

NOw of the things which we have spoken, *this*
*is* the sum: Wee have such an high priest,
who is set on the right hand of the Throne of the
Majestie in the heavens:

2 A Minister of the Sanctuary, and of the true
tabernacle which the Lord pitched and not man.

3 For every high priest is ordained to offer
gifts, and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessitie
that this man have some-what also to offer.

4 For if he were on earth, he should not bee a
priest, seeing that there are priests that offer
gifts according to the law.

5 Who serve unto the example and shadow of
heavenly

heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when hee was about to make the tabernacle. For see (saith he) that thou make all things according to the patern shewed to thee in the mount.

6 But now hath hee obtained a more excellent ministery, by how much also he is the Mediatour of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.

7 For if that first *covenant* had been faultlesse, then should no place have been sought for the second.

8 For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold the dayes come (saith the Lord) when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and the house of Judah:

9 Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers, in the day when I tooke them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those dayes saith the Lord. I will put my lawes into their minde, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.

11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: For all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

12 For I will bee mercifull to their unrighteousnesse and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

13 In that he saith, A new *covenant*, hee hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away.

## CHAP. IX.

1 *The rites and blondie sacrifices of the law.*

Then verily the first *covenant* had also ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuary.

2 For there was a tabernacle made, the first wherein was the candlestick and the table and the shew bread, which is called the Sanctuary.

3 And after the second vaile the tabernacle which is called the holiest of all,

4 Which had the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold

wherein was the golden pot that had manna, and Aarons rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant:

5 And over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the mercie-seat; of which we cannot now speak particularly.

6 Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests went alwayes into the first tabernacle, accomplishing the service of God.

7 But into the second went the high priest alone once every year, not without bloud, which he offered for himselfe, and for the errors of the people.

8 The holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing:

9 Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience;

10 *Which stood* only *in* meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnall ordinances imposed on them untill the time of reformation.

11 But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands that is to say, not of this building;

12 Neither by the bloud of goats & calves: but by his own bloud he entred in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption *for us*.

13 For if the blond of buls, and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the uncleane, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh:

14 How much more shall the bloud of Christ who through the eternall Spirit, offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God.

15 And for this cause he is the Mediatour of the new Testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions *that were* under the first Testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternall inheritance.

16 For where a testament is, there must also of necessitie be the death of the testatour.

17 For a testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all whilst the testatour liveth.

18 Where-

18 Whereupon, neither the first testament was dedicated without blood.

19 For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people, according to the law, he took the blood of calves, and of goats, with water, and scarlet-woull, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book and all the people,

20 Saying, This is the blood of the testament which God hath enjoyned unto you.

21 Moreover hee sprinkled with blood both the Tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministery.

22 And almost all things are by the law purged with blood: and without shedding of blood is no remission.

23 It was therefore necessarie that the patterns of things in the heavens should bee purified with these, but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices then these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy places made with hands which are the figures of the true, but into heaven it selfe, now to appeare in the presence of God for us.

25 Nor yet that he should offer himselfe often as the high priest entreth into the holy place every year with blood of others:

26 For then must hee often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sinne by the sacrifice of himselfe.

27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgement:

28 So Christ was once offered to beare the sinnes of many, and unto them that looke for him, shall hee appeare the second time, without sinne unto salvation.

## CHAP. X.

*1 The weaknesse of the sacrifices of the law, and power of Christs sacrifice.*

FOr the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can with those sacrifices which they offered yeare by yeare continually, make the comers thereunto perfect.

2 For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged, should have had no more conscience of sinnes.

3 But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance
again made of sins every year.
4 For it is not possible that the blood of bulls
and of goats should take away sins.
5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world,
he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not,
but a body hast thou prepared me:
6 In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin thou
hast had no pleasure.
7 Then said I, Lo, I come, (in the volume of the
book it is written of me) to do thy will, O God.
8 Above, when he said, Sacrifice, and offering,
and burnt-offerings, and offering for sin thou
wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein, which
are offered by the law;
9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy will, (O
God) He taketh away the first, that he may esta-
blish the second.
10 By the which will we are sanctified, through
the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for
all.
11 And every priest standeth daily ministering
and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices which
can never take away sins.
12 But this man, after hee had offered one sa-
crifice for sins for ever, sate down on the right
hand of God;
13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies
be made his footstool.
14 For by one offering hee hath perfected for
ever them that are sanctified.
15 Whereof the holy Ghost also is a witnesse
to us: for after that he had said before,
16 This is the covenant that I will make with
them after those dayes, saith the Lord: I will put
my laws into their hearts, and in their minds
will I write them;
17 And their sins and iniquities will I remem-
ber no more.
18 Now, where remission of these is, there is
no more offering for sin.
19 Having therefore, brethren, boldnesse to en-
ter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus,
20 By a new and living way which he hath con-
secrated for us, through the vail, that is to say, his
flesh;
21 And having an high priest over the house of
God;

22 Let us draw near w a true heart, in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, & our bodies washed w pure water.

23 Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering: (for he is faithfull y promised)

24 And let us consider one another to provoke unto love, and to good works.

25 Not forsaking the assembling of our selves together, as the manner of some is, but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approching.

26 For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,

27 But a certain fearfull looking for of judgement, and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

28 He that despised Moses law, died without mercy, under two or three witnesses.

29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath troden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the bloud of the covenant wherewith hee was sanctified, an unholy thing and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?

30 For we know him that hath said, Vengeance, *belongeth* unto mee, I will recompense, saith the Lord: and again The Lord shall judge his people.

31 It is a fearfull thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

32 But call to remembrance the former dayes, in which after ye were illuminated, yee endured a great fight of afflictions:

33 Partly whileſt ye were made a gazing stock, both by reproches & afflictions, and partly whileſt ye became companions of them that were so used.

34 For ye had compassion of me in my bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, knowing in your selves that ye have in heaven a better and an enduring substance.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompense of reward.

36 For yee have need of patience, that after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.

37 For yet a little while, and he that shal come, will come, and will not tarry.

38 Now

38 Now the just shal live by faith: but if any man draw back, my soul shal have no pleasure in him.

39 But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition: but of them that believe, to the saving of the soul.

## CHAP. XI.

*1 What faith is. 6 Without faith we cannot please God. 7 The worthy fruits thereof in the fathers of old time.*

NOw faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.

2 For by it the elders obtained a good report.

3 Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen, were not made of things which do appear.

4 By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Kain, by which hee obtained witnesse, that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead, yet speaketh.

5 By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimonie, that he pleased God.

6 But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God, must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

7 By faith Noah being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house, by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousnesse which is by faith.

8 By faith Abraham when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed, and hee went out not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith hee sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise.

10 For hee looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith also Sara her self received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged

the faithfull who had promised.

12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the skie in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable.

13 These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, & were perswaded of them, and embraced them, & confessed that they were strangers & pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seek a countrey.

15 And truly if they had been mindfull of that countrey, from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned.

16 But now they desire a better countrey, that is an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God, for he hath prepared for them a city.

17 By faith Abraham when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son.

18 Of whom it was said, that in Isaac shall thy seed be called.

19 Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead: from whence also he received him in a figure.

20 By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.

21 By faith Jacob when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph, and worshipped leaning upon the top of his staffe.

22 By faith Joseph when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel: and gave commandement concerning his bones.

23 By faith Moses when he was borne, was hid three moneths of his parents, because they saw he was a proper childe, and they not afraid of the kings commandment.

24 By faith Moses when he was come to years refused to be called the son of Pharaohs daughter:

25 Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, then to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season.

26 Esteeming the reproch of Christ greater riches then the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompense of the reward.

27 By

27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king, for he endured as seeing him who is invisible.

28 Through faith hee kept the passeover, and the sprinkling of bloud, lest hee that destroyed the first-born, should touch them.

29 By faith they passed through the Red-sea, as dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to do, were drowned.

30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven dayes.

31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them that beleeved not, when shee had received the spies with peace.

32 And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Sampson, and of Jephthae, of David, also and Samuel, and of the prophets.

33 Who through faith subdued kingdomes, wrought righteousnesse, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weaknesse were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women received their dead raised to life again: & others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection.

36 And others had triall of cruell mockings and scourgings, yea moreover, of bonds and imprisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword; they wandred about in sheep-skinnes, and goat-skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented.

38 Of whom the world was not worthy: they wandred in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth.

39 And these all having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise:

40 God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect.

## CHAP. XII.

*An exhortation to faith, patience, & godlinesse.*

WHerefor, seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay

laide every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us.

2 Looking unto Jesus the authour and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before him, endured the crosse, despising the shame, & is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your mindes.

4 Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin.

5 And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him.

6 For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.

7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons: for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not?

8 But if ye bee without chastisement, wherof all are partakers, then are yee bastards and not sons.

9 Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh, which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall wee not much rather be in subiection unto the Father of spirits, and live?

10 For they verily for a few dayes chastened us after their own pleasure, but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holinesse.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be ioyous, but grievous: nevertheless, afterward it yeeldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousnes, unto them which are exercised thereby.

12 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees

13 And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

14 Follow peace with all men, and holinesse, without which no man shall see the Lord:

15 Looking diligently, lest any man fail of the grace of God, lest any root of bitternes springing up, trouble you, and thereby many be defiled:

16 Lest there bee any fornicatour, or prophane

person, as Esau, who for one morsell of meat sold his birth-right.

17 For yee know how that afterward when he would have inherited the blessing, hee was reiected, for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with teares.

18 For yee are not come unto the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackenesse, and darkenesse, and tempest,

19 And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words, which *voice* they that heard, intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more.

20 (For they could not endure that which was commanded: and if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart.

21 And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake)

22 But yee are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,

23 To the generall assembly and church of the first-born, which *are* written in heaven, and to God the iudge of all, and to the spirits of iust men, made perfect,

24 And to Jesus the mediatour of the new covenant, and to the bloud of sprinkling, that speaketh better things then that of Abel.

25 See that yee refuse not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not *wee escape*, if we turn away from him that *speaketh* from heaven.

26 Whose voice then shook the earth, but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more, I shake not the earth only, but also heaven.

27 And this *word*, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain.

28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdome which cannot be moved, let us have grace wherebye we may serve God acceptably, with reverence and godly fear.

29 For our God is a consuming fire.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Diuers admonitions to charity, and other vertues. 19 The conclusion of the Epistle.

LEt brotherly loue continue.

2 Be not forgetfull to entertain strangers, for thereby some haue entertained angels vnawares.

3 Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them. And them which suffer aduersity, as being your selues also in the body.

4 Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will iudge.

5 Let your conuersation be without couetousnesse: and be content with such things as ye haue. For he hath said, I will neuer leaue thee, nor forsake thee.

6 So that wee may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not feare what man shall do vnto mee.

7 Remember them which haue the rule ouer you, who haue spoken vnto you the word of God: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conuersation.

8 Iesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for euer.

9 Be not carried about with diuers and strange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace, not with meats, which haue not profited them that haue been occupied therein.

10 We haue an altar whereof they haue no right to eat, which serue the tabernacle.

11 For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burnt without the camp.

12 Wherefore Iesus also, that he might sanctifie the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate.

13 Let us go forth therefore vnto him without the camp, bearing his reproch.

14 For here haue wee no continuing city, but we seek one to come.

15 By him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is the fruit of our lips, giuing thanks to his name.

16 But to do good, and to communicate forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

17 Obey

17 Obey them that have the rule over you, and
submit your selves: for they watch for your souls,
as they that must give account: that they may do
it with ioy, and not with grief: for that is un-
profitable for you.
18 Pray for us: for we trust wee have a good
conscience, in all things willing to live honestly.
19 But I beseech you the rather to do this, that
I may be restored to you the sooner.
20 Now the God of peace that brought againe
from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great shep-
herd of the sheep, through the bloud of the ever-
lasting covenant.
21 Make you perfect in every good work to do
his will, working in you that which is well plea-
sing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom
be glory for ever and ever. Amen.
22 And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word
of exhortation, for I have written a letter unto
you in few words.
23 Know ye, that our brother Timothy is set at
liberty, whom if he come shortly, I will see you.
24 Salute all them that have the rule over you,
and all the saints, They of Italie salute you.
25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrews from Italie, by
Timothie.

---

## ¶ The generall Epistle of James.

### CHAP. I.

*We are to reioyce under ye crosse, 5 to ask patience of God. 10 to hear the word, & to do thereafter.*

JAmes a servynt of God, and of the Lord
Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes,
which are scattered abroad, greeting.
2 My brethren, count it all ioy when
ye fall into divers temptations.
3 Knowing this, that the trying of your faith
worketh patience.
4 But let patience have her perfect work, that
ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.
5 If any of you lack wisedome, let him ask of
God, that giveth to all men liberally, and up-
braideth not, and it shall be given him.

6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wauering:
For he that wauereth, is like a waue of the sea
driuen with the winde and tossed.
7 For let not that man think that hee shall re-
ceiue any thing of the Lord.
8 A double-minded man is vnstable in all his
wayes.
9 Let the brother of low degree reioyce in
that he is exalted:
10 But the rich, in that he is made low: because
as the flower of the graſſe, he shall paſſe away.
11 For the sun is no sooner risen with a burning
heat, but it withereth ỹ graſſe: & the flower thereof falleth, and ỹ grace of ỹ fashion of it perisheth:
so also shal the rich man fade away in his wayes.
12 Blessed is the man ỹ endureth temptation: for
when he is tried he shal receiue the crown of life,
which ỹ Lord hath promised to them ỹ loue him.
13 Let no man say when hee is tempted, I am
tempted of God: for God cannot bee tempted
with euil, neither tempteth he any man.
14 But euery man is tempted when he is drawn
away of his own lust, and entised.
15 Then when lust hath conceiued, it bringeth
forth sin: and sin when it is finished, bringeth
forth death.
16 Do not erre, my beloued brethren.
17 Euery good gift, and euery perfect gift is
from aboue, and cometh down from the Father
of lights, with whom is no variablenesse, neither
shadow of turning.
18 Of his own will begat he vs with the word
of truth, that we should be a kinde of first-fruits
of his creatures.
19 Wherefore, my beloued brethren, let euery
man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath:
20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righ-
teousnesse of God.
21 Wherefore lay apart all filthinesse, and ſu-
perfluity of naughtinesse, and receiue with meek-
nesse the ingrafted word, which is able to saue
your soules.
22 But be ye doers of the word, and not hear-
ers only, deceiuing your owne selues.
23 For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a
doer, he is like vnto a man beholding his natural
face in a glasse.
24 For

24 For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, & straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

25 But who so looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

26 If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this mans religion is vaine.

27 Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father, is this, To visit the fatherlesse, and widows in their affliction, and to keepe himselfe unspotted from the world.

## CHAP. II.

*Christians must not regard the rich, & despise the poore.* 14 *Faith without works, is a dead faith.*

MY brethren, have not the Faith of our Lord Jesus Christ *the Lord* of glory, with respect of persons.

2 For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparell, and there come in also a poore man, in vile rayment:

3 And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poore, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstoole:

4 Are ye not then partiall in your selves, and are become judges of evil thoughts.

5 Hearken my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poore of this world, rich in Faith, and heirs of the kingdome, which he hath promised to them that love him?

6 But yee have despised the poore. Doe not rich men oppresse you, and draw you before the judgement seats.

7 Do not they blaspheme that worthy Name, by the which ye are called?

8 If ye fulfill the royall law, according to the Scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy selfe, ye doe well.

9 But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressours.

10 For whosoever shall keepe the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

11 For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Doe not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery,

ministery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a trans-
gressour of the law.

12 So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be
judged by the law of liberty.

13 For he *shall have* judgement without mer-
cy, that hath shewed no mercy: and mercy rejoy-
ceth against judgement.

14 What doth it profit, my brethren, though
a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can
faith save him?

15 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute
of daily food,

16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in
peace, be you warmed, and filled: notwithstand-
ing ye give them not those things which are need
full to the body: what doth it profit?

17 Even so faith, if it have not works, is dead
being alone.

18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I
have works: shew me thy faith without thy works;
and I will shew thee my faith by my works.

19 Thou beleevest that there is one God, thou
dost well: the devils also beleeve, and tremble.

20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith
without works is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father justified by
works, when hee had offered Isaac his son upon
the altar?

22 Seest thou how faith wrought with his
works, and by works was faith made perfect?

23 And the scripture was fulfilled which faith,
Abraham beleeved God, and it was imputed un-
to him for righteousnesse: and he was called the
friend of God.

24 Ye see then how that by works a man is ju-
stified, and not by faith only.

25 Likewise also, was not Rahab the harlot
justified by works, when she had received the mes-
sengers, and had sent them out another way?

26 For as the body without the spirit is dead,
so faith without works is dead also.

## CHAP. III.

5 *The tongue must be bridled,* 13 *Let the truly wise
be milde & peaceable, without envying & strife.*

My brethren, be not many masters, knowing
that wee shall receive the greater condem-
nation.

2 For

2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body.

3 Behold, we put bits in y horses mouths, y they may obey us, & we turn about their whole body.

4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whitherso-ever the governour listeth.

5 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things: behold how great a mat-ter a little fire kindleth.

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue amongst our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.

7 For every kinde of beasts and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of mankinde:

8 But the tongue can no man tame, it is an un-ruly evil, full of deadly poison.

9 Therewith blesse we God, even the Father, and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to be.

11 Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter?

12 Can the fig-tree, my brethren, bear olive-berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yeeld salt water and fresh.

13 Who is a wise man and endued with know-ledge amongst you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wise-dome.

14 But if ye have bitter envying & strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth.

15 This wisedome descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensuall, devilish.

16 For where envying and strife is, there is confusion, and every evil work.

17 But the wisedome that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easie to be en-treated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisie.

18 And the fruit of righteousnesse is sown in peace of them that make peace.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 Against covetousnesse & intemperancy, 5 pride, 11 detraction and rash censuring.*

FRom whence come wars and fightings among you? come they not hence, even of your lusts, that war in your members?

2 Ye lust, and have not, yee kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtaine: ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not.

3 Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amisse, that ye may consume it upon your lusts.

4 Ye adulterers, and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God.

5 Do yee think that the Scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envie?

6 But he giveth more grace, wherefore he saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble.

7 Submit your selves therefore to God: resist the devil, and he will flee from you.

8 Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you: cleanse your hands ye sinners, and purifie your hearts ye double minded.

9 Be afflicted, & mourn & weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, & your joy to heavinesse.

10 Humble your selves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.

11 Speak not evil one of another (brethren) he that speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother, speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.

12 There is one law giver, who is able to save, and to destroy: who art thou that judgest another?

13 Go to now, ye that say, To day, or to morrow wee will go into such a city, and continue there a yeare, and buy and sell, and get gaine:

14 Whereas ye know not what *shall be* on the morrow: for what is your life? it is even a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away.

15 For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will we shall live, and do this, or that.

16 But

16 But now ye rejoyce in your boastings: all such rejoycing is evil.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doth it not, to him it is sin.

## CHAP. V.

*1 Of wicked rich men. 7 Of patience. 12 To forbear swearing.*

GO to now yee rich men, weep and howl, for your miseries that shall come upon you.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments moth-eaten.

3 Your gold and silver is cankered, and the rust of them shall be a witnesse against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire: yee have heaped treasure together for the last dayes.

4 Behold the hire of the labourers, which have reaped down your fields, which of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries of them which have reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of Sabaoth.

5 Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton: ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye have condemned *and* killed the just, *and* he doth not resist you.

7 Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord: behold the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, untill he receive the early and latter raine.

8 Be yee also patient; stablish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the judge standeth before the doore.

10 Take, my brethren, the prophets who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitifull and of tender mercy.

12 But above all things, my brethren, sweare not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay, lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing psalmes.

14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the
elders of the church, and let them pray over him,
anointing him with oyl in the name of the Lord:
15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick,
and the Lord shall raise him up: and if he have
committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.
16 Confesse your faults one to another, and pray
one for another, that ye may be healed: the effectual
fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.
17 Elias was a man subiect to like passions as
we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not
rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space
of three years and six moneths.
18 And he prayed again, and the heaven gave
rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit.
19 Brethren, if any of you doe erre from the
truth, and one convert him:
20 Let him know, that he which converteth the
sinner from the error of his way, shall save a soul
from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.

---

## ¶ The first Epistle generall of Peter.

### CHAP. I.

*1 He loseth God for his spirituall graces. 10 Salvation in Christ prophesied of old.*

PEter an Apostle of Jesus Christ, to the
strangers scattered throughout Pon-
tus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and
Bithynia,
2 Elect according to the foreknow-
ledge of God the Father, through sanctification of
the Spirit unto obedience, and sprinkling of the
blood of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you, and peace
be multiplied.
3 Blessed bee the God, and Father of our Lord
Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant
mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively hope
by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,
4 To an inheritance incorruptible, & undefiled,
and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you,
5 Who are kept by the power of God through
faith unto salvation, ready to be revealed in the
last time.
6 Wherein ye greatly reioyce, though now for a
season (if need be) yee are in heavinesse through
manifold temptations.

7 That the triall of your faith being much more precious then of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise, and honour & glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ.
8 Whom having not seen, yee love: in whom though now ye see *him* not, yet beleeving, ye rejoyce with joy unspeakable and full of glory.
9 Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your soules.
10 Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace *that should come* unto you:
11 Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signifie, when he testified before-hand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.
12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you, with the holy Ghost sent down from heaven, which things the angels desire to look into.
13 Wherefore gird up the loins of your minde, be sober, and hope to the end, for the grace that is to bee brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ.
14 As obedient children, not fashioning your selves according to former lusts in your ignorance:
15 But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation.
16 Because it is written, Be ye holy, for I am holy.
17 And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every mans work, passe the time of your sojourning here in feare:
18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold from your vain conversation *received* by tradition from your fathers:
19 But with the precious bloud of Christ, as of a Lamb without blemish and without spot.
20 Who verily was fore-ordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you,
21 Who by him do beleeve in God that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.
22 Seeing

22 Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfeigned love of the brethren: see that yee love one another with a pure heart fervently,

23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God which liveth and abideth for ever.

24 For all flesh *is* as grasse, and all the glory of man, as the flower of grasse: the grasse withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away:

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

## CHAP. II.

*He deborteth them from the breach of charity: 24 shewing that Christ is the foundation.*

WHerefore laying aside all malice and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings,

2 As new born babes desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:

3 If so be ye have tasted ẏ the Lord is gracious.

4 To whom coming, *as* unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious,

5 Ye also as lively stones, are built up a spirituall house, an holy priesthood to offer up spirituall sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

6 Wherefore it is contained in the scripture, Behold I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious: and he that beleeveth on him shall not be confounded.

7 Unto you therefore which beleeve he is precious: but unto them which bee disobedient, the stone which the builder disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,

8 And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, *even to them* which stumble at ẏ word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

9 But ye are a chosen generation a royall priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people, that ye should shew forth ẏ praises of him who hath called you out of darknes into his marvellous light:

10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

11 Dearly

11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul.

12 Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles, that whereas they speak against you as evil doers, they may by your good works which they shal behold, glorifie God in day of visitation.

13 Submit your selves to every ordinance of man for the Lords sake, whether it be to the king, as supreme,

14 Or unto governours, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evil doers, and for the praise of them that do well.

15 For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.

16 As free, and not using your liberty for a cloke of maliciousnes, but as the servants of God.

17 Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the King.

18 Servants be subiect to your masters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.

19 For this is thank-worthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully.

20 For what glory is it, if when ye be buffetted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently: this is acceptable with God.

21 For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps.

22 Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth.

23 Who when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered he threatned not, but committed *himself* to him that iudgeth righteously.

24 Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we being dead to sinne, should live unto righteousnesse, by whose stripes ye were healed.

25 For yee were as sheep going astray, but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls. CHAP. III.

*The duty of wives and husbands to each other.*

LIkewise, yee wives, bee in subiection to your own husbands, that if any obey not the word,

they,

they also may without the word bee won by the conversation of the wives:

2 While they beholde your chaste conversation coupled with fear.

3 Whose adorning let it not bee that outward adorning, of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparell:

4 But *let it be* the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, *even the* ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

5 For after this manner in the old time, the holy women also who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subiection unto their owne husbands.

6 Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him Lord, whose daughters yee are as long as yee do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

7 Likewise yee husbands dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heires together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindred.

8 Finally, *be ye* all of one minde, having compassion one of another, love as brethren, be pitifull, *be* courteous:

9 Not rendring evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing, knowing that yee are thereunto called, *that* ye should inherit a blessing.

10 For he that will love life, and see good dayes, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile.

11 Let him eschew evil and do good, *let him* seek peace, and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord *are* over the righteous and his eares *are open* unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord *is* against them that do evil.

13 And who is he that will harm you, if yee be followers of that which is good?

14 But and if ye suffer for righteousnesse sake, happy *are ye*, and be not afraid of their terrour, neither be troubled:

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts, and *be* ready always to give an answer to *every* man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you with meekenesse and feare:

16 Having

16 Having a good conscience, that whereas they speak evill of you, as of evil doers, they may be ashamed that falsly accuse your good conversation in Christ.

17 For it is better, if the will of God be so, that ye suffer for well doing, then for evil doing.

18 For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, (that he might bring us to God) being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:

19 By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison,

20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the long suffering of God waited in the dayes of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, y is eight soules were saved by water.

21 The like figure whereunto, even baptisme, doth also now save us, (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience towards God) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ:

22 Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God, angels and authorities, and powers being made subject unto him.

## CHAP. IIII.

*He exhorteth them to cease from sin. 12 and comforteth them against persecution.*

1 Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm your selves likewise with the same minde: for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin,

2 That he no longer should live the rest of his time, in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousnesse, lusts, excesse of wine, revellings, banquettings & abominable idolatries:

4 Wherein they think it strange that you run not with them to the same excesse of riot, speaking evil of you:

5 Who shall give accompt to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.

6 For, for this cause was the gospel preached also to them that are dead, y they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.

7 But

7 But the end of all things is at hand: bee ye therefore sober and watch unto prayer.

8 And above all things have fervant charity among your selves: for charity shall cover the multitude of sins.

9 Use hospitality one to another without grudging.

10 As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speak, *let him speak* as the oracles of God: if any man minister *let him do it* as of the ability which God giveth, that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery triall, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you.

13 But rejoyce in as much as ye are partakers of Christs sufferings; that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

14 If ye bee reproched for the name of Christ, happy *are ye*, for the spirit of glory, and of God resteth upon you: on their part hee is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evil doer, or as a busie body in other mens matters.

16 Yet if *any man suffer* as a Christian let him not be ashamed, but let him glorifie God on this behalf.

17 For the time *is come* that judgement must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end bee of them that obey not the gospel of God?

18 And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God commit the keeping of their soules to him in well doing, as unto a faithfull Creator.

## CHAP. V.

1 *He exhorteth the elders to feed their flocks.*
5 *The younger to obey.* 9 *to resist the divel.*

THe elders which are among you I exhort, who I am also an elder, and a witnesse of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed.

2 Feed

2 Feed the flock of God which is among you;
aking ye oversight *thereof*, not by constraint, but
ilingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind
3 Neither as being lords over *Gods* heritage:
ut being ensamples to the flock.
4 And when the chief shepherd shall appear, ye
al receive a crown of glory ye fadeth not away.
5 Likewise ye younger, submit your selves unto
e elder: yea, all *of you* be subject one to another
d be clothed with humility: for God resisteth
e proud, and giveth grace to the humble.
6 Humble your selves therefore under the migh-
y hand of God, ye he may exalt you in due time:
7 Casting all your care upon him, for he careth
r you.
8 Be sober, be vigilant: because your adversa-
is the devil, as a roaring lion walketh about
cking whom he may devoure.
9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing
at the same afflictions are accomplished in your
rethren that are in the world.
10 But the God of all grace who hath called
into his eternall glory by Christ Jesus, after
at ye have suffered a while, make you perfect,
ablish, strengthen, settle you.
11 To him bee glory and dominion for ever
d ever. Amen.
12 By Silvanus a faithful brother unto you (as I
ppose) I have writtē briefly, exhorting & testify
g ye this is ye true grace of God wherein ye stand.
13 The church ye is at Babylon elected together
ith you saluteth you, & *so doth* Marcus my son.
14 Greet ye one another with a kisse of charity:
race be with you all ye are in Christ Jesus. Amen.

---

## The second Epistle generall of Peter.

### CHAP. I.

*He confirmeth them, 5 and exhorteth them to make their calling sure.*

SImon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us, through the righteousnesse of God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ:

2 Grace

2 Grace & peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord,

3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life, and godlinesse, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and vertue:

4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

5 And besides this, giving all diligence, adde to your faith, vertue; and to vertue, knowledge:

6 And to knowledge, temperance; and to temperance, patience; and to patience, godlinesse;

7 And to godlinesse, brotherly kindenesse; and to brotherly kindenesse, charity.

8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren, nor unfruitfull in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things, is blinde, and cannot see far off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.

10 Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things ye shall never fall:

11 For so an entrance shall be ministred unto you abundantly, into the everlasting kingdome of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth.

13 Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you up, by putting you in remembrance;

14 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me.

15 Moreover, I will endeavour, that you may be able after my decease, to have these things always in remembrance.

16 For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye witnesses of his Majesty.

17 For he received from God the Father, honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him

him from the excellent glory. This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

19 We have also a more sure word of prophesie, whereunto ye doe well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a darke place, until the day dawne, and the day-star arise in your hearts:

20 Knowing this first, that no prophesie of the Scripture is of any private interpretation.

21 For the prophesie came not in old time, by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the holy Ghost.

## CHAP. II.

1 *Hee foretelleth them of false teachers.*

BUt there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall bee false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

2 And many shall follow their pernicious wayes, by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of.

3 And through covetousnesse shall they with fained words make merchandise of you: whose judgement now of a long time lingred not, and their damnation slumbreth not.

4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them downe to hell, *and* delivered them into chains of darknes to be reserved unto judgement.

5 And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth *person*, a preacher of righteousnesse, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly.

6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorra into ashes, condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly:

7 And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked:

8 (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with *their* unlawfull deeds:)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgement to be punished:

10 But chiefly them that walke after the flesh

In the lust of uncleanneſſe, and deſpiſe gover-
ment, preſumptuous *are they*, ſelfe-willed, they
are not afraid to ſpeake evil of dignities.

11 Whereas angels which are greater in powe
and might, bring not railing accuſation again
them before the Lord.

12 But theſe, as naturall brute beaſts, made t
be taken and deſtroyed, ſpeak evil of the thing
that they underſtand not, *and* ſhall utterly perii
in their owne corruption.

13 *And* ſhall receive the reward of unright
ouſneſſe, *as* they that count it pleaſure to riot i
the day time. ſpots *they are* and blemiſhes, ſport
ing themſelves with their own deceivings, whi
they feaſt with you;

14 Having eyes full of adulterie, and tha
cannot ceaſe from ſin, beguiling unſtable ſoule
an heart they have exerciſed with covetous pra
Curſed children!

15 Which have forſaken the right way, and a
gone aſtray, following the way of Balaam *the ſo*
of Boſor, who loved the wages of unrighteouſne

16 But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dum
aſſe ſpeaking with mans voice, forbade the mad
neſſe of the prophet.

17 Theſe are wells without water, clouds th
are carried with a tempeſt, to whom the miſt o
darkneſſe is reſerved for ever.

18 For when they ſpeake great ſwelling *word*
of vanitie, they allure through the luſts of th
fleſh, through much wantonneſſe, theſe that we
cleane eſcaped from them who live in errour.

19 While they promiſe them liberty, the
themſelves are the ſervants of corruption: For
whom a man is overcome, of the ſame he
brought in bondage.

20 For if after they have eſcaped the pollution
of the world through the knowledge of the Lo
and Saviour Jeſus Chriſt, they are againe intang
led therein, *and* overcome; the letter end is wor
with them then the beginning.

21 For it had beene better for them not to hav
knowne the way of righteouſneſſe, then after th
have knowne it, to turne from the holy comma
dement delivered unto them.

22 But it is happened unto them according t

the true proverbe, The dog is turned to his owne vomit againe, and the sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

## CHAP. III.

*The certainty of Christs comming to judgement.*

THis second Epistle (beloved) I now write unto you, in both which I stir up your pure mindes by way of remembrance:

2 That ye may be mind full of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the Apostles of the Lord and Saviour:

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last dayes scoffers, walking after their own lusts,

4 And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water, and in the water.

6 Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.

7 But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word, are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgement, and perdition of ungodly men.

8 But (beloved) bee not ignorant of this one thing that one day is with the Lord as a thousand yeares, and a thousand yeares as one day.

9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackenesse) but is long-suffering to us ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a theefe in the night, in the which the heavens shall passe away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the workes that are therein shall bee burnt up.

11 Seeing then that all these things shall bee dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godlinesse,

12 Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall bee dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat.

13 Nevertheless we according to his promise look

looke for new heavens, and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousnesse.

14 Wherefore (beloved) seeing that ye looke for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blamelesse,

15 And account that the long-suffering of our Lord is salvation, even as our beloved brother Paul also, according to the wisedome given unto him, hath written unto you.

16 As also in all his Epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they doe also the other Scriptures, unto their owne destruction.

17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing yee know these things before, beware lest ye also being led away with the errour of the wicked, fall from your owne stedfastnesse.

18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ: To him be glorie both now and for ever. Amen.

## ¶ The first Epistle generall of John.

### CHAP. I.

*1 He describeth the person of Christ in whom we have eternall life by a communion with God.*

THat which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which wee have seene with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled of the word of life;

2 (For the life was manifested, and wee have seene it, and beare witnesse, and shew unto you that eternall life which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us)

3 That which wee have seene and heard, declare wee unto you, that yee also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.

4 And these things write we unto you that your joy may be full.

5 This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darknesse at all.

6 If wee say that wee have no fellowship with

sin, and walke in darkneſſe, wee lie, and doe not the truth.

7 But if wee walke in the light as hee is in the light, wee have fellowſhip one with another, and the blond of Jeſus Chriſt his Son cleanſeth us from all ſin.

8 If we ſay that we have no ſin, we deceive our ſelves, and the truth is not in us.

9 If we confeſſe our ſins, he is faithfull, and juſt to forgive us our ſins, and to cleanſe us from all unrighteouſneſſe.

10 If we ſay that we have not ſinned, wee make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

## CHAP. II.

*1 To know God, is to keep his commandments.*

MY little children, theſe things write I unto you, that ye ſin not. And if any man ſin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jeſus Chriſt the righteous:

2 And he is the propitiation for our ſins: and not for ours only, but alſo for *the ſins of* the whole world.

3 And hereby we doe know that we know him, if we keepe his commandments,

4 He that ſaith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, & the truth is not in him.

5 But whoſo keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know wee that we are in him.

6 He that ſaith hee abideth in him, ought himſelfe alſo ſo to walke, even as he walked.

7 Brethren, I write no new commandment unto you, but an old commandment which ye had from the beginning: the old commandment is the word which yee have heard from the beginning.

8 Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in him and in you: becauſe the darkneſſe is paſt, and the true light now ſhineth.

9 He that ſaith hee is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darkneſſe even until now.

10 Hee that loveth his brother abideth in the light, and there is none occaſion of ſtumbling in him.

11 But hee that hateth his brother, is in darkneſſe, and walketh in darkneſſe, and knoweth not whither hee goeth, becauſe that darkneſſe hath blinded his eyes.

12 I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for his Names sake.

13 I write unto you, fathers, because yee have knowne him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because you have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because ye have knowne the Father.

14 I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have knowne him *that is* from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are stronge, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that *is* in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but *is* of the world.

17 And ℣ world passeth away & the lust thereof: but he that doth the will of God abideth for ever.

18 Little children, it is the last time, and as ye have heard that Antichrist shall come, even now are there many Antichrists, whereby wee know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from us, but they were not of us: For if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but *they went out*, that they might be made manifest, that they were not all of us.

20 But ye have an unction from the holy One, and ye know all things.

21 I have not written unto you, because ye know not the truth; but because yee know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

22 Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? hee is Antichrist that denieth the Father and the Son.

23 Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: *but hee that acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also.*

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning: if that which ye have heard from the beginning, shall remaine in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that hee hath promised us, even eternall life.

26 These

26 These things have I written unto you, concerning them that seduce you.

27 But the anointing which ye have received of him, abideth in you: and yee need not that any man teach you: But as ỹ same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie: and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.

28 And now, little children, abide in him, that when he shall appeare, wee may have confidence, and not bee ashamed before him at his coming.

29 If ye know ỹ he is righteous, ye know that every one that doth righteousnesse, is born of him.

## CHAP. III.

*He declareth the singular love of God towards us*

BEhold, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that wee should bee called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

2 Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appeare what wee shall bee: but wee know, that when hee shall appeare, wee shall bee like him: For we shall see him as he is.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himselfe, even as he is pure.

4 Whosoever committeth sin, transgresseth also the law: For sin is the transgression of the law.

5 And yee know that he was manifested to take away our sins, and in him is no sin.

6 Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: whosoever sinneth, hath not seen him, neither knowne him.

7 Little children let no man deceive you: hee that doth righteousnesse, is righteous, even as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sin, is of the devil: For the devil sinneth from the beginning: For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that hee might destroy the workes of the devil.

9 Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin: For his seed remaineth in him: and hee cannot sin, because he is borne of God.

10 In this the children of God, are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doth not righteousnesse, is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

11 For this is the message that yee heard from

the beginning, that wee should love one another.

12 Not as Cain, *who* was of that wicked one, and slew his brother: and wherefore slew he him? because his own works were evil, and his brothers righteous.

13 Marvell not my brethren, if the world hate you.

14 Wee know that wee have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren: hee that loveth not his brother, abideth in death.

15 Whosoever hateth his brother is a murtherer, and ye know that no murtherer hath eternall life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceive wee the love of God, because he laid down his life for us: and wee ought to lay downe our lives for the brethren.

17 But who so hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?

18 My little children, let us not love in word neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth.

19 And hereby wee know that wee are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him.

20 For if our heart condemne us, God *is* greater then our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloved, if our heart condemne us not, *then* have we confidence towards God.

22 And whatsoever we aske, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

23 And this is his commandment that we should beleeve on the Name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another as he gave us commandment.

24 And hee that keepeth his commandments, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby wee know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

## CHAP. IIII.

1 *Hee warneth them not to beleeve all teachers, but to trie them by the rules of the catholick faith*

BEloved, beleeve not every spirit, but try the spirits, whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out unto the world.

2 Hereby know yee the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And

3 And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that *spirit* of Antichrist, whereof you have heard that it should come, and even now already is it in the world.

4 Yee are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is hee that is in you, then he that is in the world.

5 They are of the world: therefore speake they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God, heareth not us: hereby know we the Spirit of truth, & the spirit of errour.

7 Beloved let us love one another: For love is of God: and every one that loveth, is born of God, and knoweth God.

8 Hee that loveth not, knoweth not God, *for* God is love.

9 In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him.

10 Herein is love, not that we loved God but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins.

11 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another.

12 No man hath seene God at any time. If wee love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us.

13 Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

14 And we have seen and do testifie, that the Father sent the Son *to be* the Saviour of the world.

15 Whosoever shall confesse that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

16 And we have knowne and beleeved the love that God hath to us. God is love, & he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is our love made perfect, that wee may have boldnesse in the day of judgement: because as he is, so are wee in this world.

18 There is no feare in love, but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment: hee that feareth, is not made perfect in love.

19 We love him: because he first loved us.

20 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: For hee that loveth not his brother whom he hath seene, how can hee love God whom he hath not seen?

21 And this commandment have we from him, that he who loveth God, love his brother also.

## CHAP. V.

*He that loveth God, loveth his children and keepeth his commandments.*

WHosoever beleeveth that Jesus is the Christ is borne of God: and every one that loveth him † begat, loveth him also † is begotten of him

2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when wee love God and keep his commandments.

3 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments, and his commandments are not grievous.

4 For whatsoever is borne of God, overcometh the world, and this the victory that overcometh the world even our faith.

5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that beleeveth that Jesus is the Son of God?

6 This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ, not by water only, but by water and blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth witnesse, because the Spirit is truth.

7 For there are three that beare record in heaven, The Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And there are three that beare witnesse on earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood, and these three agree in one.

9 If we receive the witnesse of men, the witnesse of God is greater: For this is the witnesse of God which he hath testified of his Son.

10 Hee that beleeveth on the Son of God, hath the witnesse in himself: he that beleeveth not God, hath made him a liar, because he beleeveth not the record that God gave of his Son.

11 And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternall life: and this life is in his Son.

12 He that hath his Son, hath life: and he that hath not the Son of God, hath not life.

13 These things have I written unto you that beleeve on the name of the Son of God, that yee may

may know that ye have eternall life, and that ye may beleeve on the Name of the Son of God.

14 And this is the confidence that wee have in him, that if wee aske any thing according to his will, he heareth us.

15 And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we aske, we know that we have the petitions that wee desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sin a sin *which is* not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life, for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shal pray for it.

17 All unrighteousnesse is sin, and there is a sin not unto death.

18 Wee know that whosoever is borne of God sinneth not, but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himselfe, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lyeth in wickednesse.

20 And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding that wee may know him that is true: and wee are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternall life.

21 Little children, keep your selves from idols. Amen.

---

## ¶ The second Epistle of John.

*1 Exhortation to persevere in Christian love and belief, 8 lest they lose the reward of their profession.*

THe elder unto the elect lady, and her children, whom I love in the truth: and not I only, but also all they that have knowne the truth:

2 For the truths sake which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us for ever.

3 Grace bee with you, mercy and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ the Son of the Father, in truth and love.

4 I rejoyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father.

5 And now I beseech thee lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which

which wee had from the beginning, that we love one another.

6 And this is love that we walke after his commandments. This is the commandment, that as ye have heard from the beginning, yee should walke in it.

7 For many deceivers are entred into the world, who confesse not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an Antichrist.

8 Looke to your selves, that wee loose not those things which we have wrought, but that wee receive a full reward.

9 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, hee hath both the Father and the Son.

10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed.

11 For he that bideth him God speed, is partaker of his evil deeds.

12 Having many things to write unto you, I would not write with paper and inke, but I trust to come unto you, and speake face to face, that our joy may be full.

13 The children of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.

## ¶ The third Epistle of John.

*He commendeth Gaius for his pietie, 5 and hospitalitie. 6 to true preachers: 9 complaining of the unkinde dealing of ambitious Diotrephes.*

THe elder unto the well beloved Gaius whom I love in the truth:

2 Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and bee in health, even as thy soul prospereth.

3 For I rejoyced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou walkest in the truth.

4 I have no greater joy then to heare that my children walke in truth.

5 Beloved, thou doest faithfully whatsoever thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers:

6 Which

6 Which have born witnesse of thy charity before the church: whom if thou bring forward on their journey after a godly sort, thou shalt do well.

7 Because that for his Names sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receive such, that we might be fellow helpers to the truth.

9 I wrote unto the church, but Diotrephes who loveth to have the preeminence among them receiveth us not.

10 Wherfore if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doth, prating against us with malicious words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbideth them that would, and casteth them out of the church.

11 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doth good, is of God: but he that doth evil, hath not seen God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth it self: yea, and we *also* bear record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 I had many things to write, but I will not with inke and pen write unto thee.

14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speake face to face. Peace be to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name.

## ¶ The generall Epistle of Jude.

3 *An exhortation to constancie in faith.* 13 *Horrible punishments prepared for false teachers.*

IUde the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called:

2 Mercy unto you, & peace, & love be multiplied.

3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation: it was needfull for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the Faith which was once delivered unto the Saints.

4 For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousnesse, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that beleeved not.

6 And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chaines under darkenesse, unto the judgement of the great day.

7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them, in like manner giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternall fire.

8 Likewise also these filthie dreamers defile the flesh despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.

9 Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil, hee disputed about the bodie of Moses durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.

10 But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves.

11 Wo unto them, for they have gone in the way of Cain, & ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in ỹ gainsaying of Core.

12 These are spots in your feasts of charitie, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of windes; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots;

13 Raging waves of the sea, foming out their owne shame; wandring stars, to whom is reserved the blacknesse of darknesse for ever.

14 And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his Saints,

15 To execute judgement upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them, of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard *speeches*, which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their owne lusts, and their mouth speaketh great swelling *words*, having mens persons in admiration because of advantage.

17 But beloved, remember ye the words which were

were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ:

18 How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walke after their owne ungodly lusts.

19 These be they who separate themselves sensuall, having not the Spirit.

20 But ye beloved, building up your selves on your most holy Faith, praying in the holy Ghost,

21 Keepe your selves in the love of God, looking for the mercies of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternall life.

22 And of some have compassion, making a difference:

23 And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire: hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy,

25 To the only wise God our Saviour, be glory, & majesty, dominion & power, now and ever. Amen.

## ¶ The Revelation of Saint John the divine.

### CHAP. I.

*4 John writeth to the seven Churches of Asia.*

THE Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to passe: and he sent and signified *it* by his angel unto his servant John:

2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.

3 Blessed is hee that readeth, and they that heare the words of this prophesie, and keep those things, which are written therein: For the time is at hand.

4 John to the seven churches in Asia, Grace *be* unto you, and peace from him which is, and which was, and which is to come, and from the seven spirits which are before his Throne:

5 And from Jesus Christ, *who is* the faithfull witnesse, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth: unto him that love*th*

loved us, and washed us from our sins in his owne bloud,

6 And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father: To him bee glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen

7 Behold, hee cometh with clouds, and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall waile because of him, even so, Amen.

8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

9 I John, who also am your brother and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdome and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.

10 I was in the spirit on the Lords day, and heard behinde me a great voice, as of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and what thou seest, write in a booke, and send it unto the seven Churches which are in Asia, unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks.

13 And in the midst of the seven candlesticks, one like unto the Son of man, clothed with a garment downe to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.

14 His head and his hair were white like wooll, as white as snow, & his eyes *were* as a flame of fire

15 And his feet were like unto fine brasse, as if they burned in a furnace: and his voice as the sound of many waters.

16 And he had in his right hand seven starrs: and out of his mouth went a sharp two edged sword: and his countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength.

17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feete as dead: and he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not. I am the first and the last.

18 I am hee that liveth, and was dead: and behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen, and have the keyes of hell and of death,

19 Write the things which thou haſt ſeene, and the things which are, and the things which ſhall be hereafter.

20 The myſtery of the ſeven ſtars which thou ſaweſt in my right hand, and the ſeven golden candleſticks. The ſeven ſtars are the angels of the ſeven Churches: and the ſeven candleſtickes which thou ſaweſt, are the ſeven Churches.

## CHAP. II.

*What is to bee written to the angels of the ſeven churches.*

VNto the angel of the church of Epheſus, write, Theſe things ſaith hee that holdeth the ſeven ſtars in his right hand, who walketh in the midſt of the ſeven golden candleſticks:

2 I know thy workes, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canſt not bear them which are evil, and thou haſt tried them which ſay they are apoſtles, and are not, & haſt found them liars:

3 And haſt borne, and haſt patience, and for my Names ſake haſt laboured, and haſt not fainted.

4 Nevertheleſſe, I have *ſome-what* againſt thee, becauſe thou haſt left thy firſt love.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the firſt works, or elſe I will come unto thee quickly, & will remove thy candleſtick out of his place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou haſt, that thou hateſt the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I alſo hate.

7 He that hath an eare, let him hear what the Spirit ſaith unto the Churches, To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midſt of the paradiſe of God.

8 And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna, write, Theſe things ſaith the firſt and the laſt, which was dead, and is alive.

9 I know thy workes, and tribulation, and povertie, (but thou art rich) and I *know* the blaſphemy of them which ſay they are Jews and are not, but *are* the ſynagogue of Satan.

10 Fear none of thoſe things which thou ſhalt ſuffer: behold, the devil ſhall caſt ſome of you into priſon, that ye may bee tried, and ye ſhall have tribulation ten dayes, bee thou faithfull unto death, and I will give thee a crowne of life.

11 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the

Spirit

Spirit saith unto the Churches, He that overcommeth, shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos, write. These things saith he, which hath the sharp sword with two edges,

13 I know thy workes, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan seat is, and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my Faith, even in those dayes wherein Antipas was my faithfull martyr, who was slaine among you, where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling block before the children of Israel, to eate things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication.

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans which thing I hate.

16 Repent, or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith unto the churches, To him that overcommeth will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it.

18 And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira, write, These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brasse.

19 I know thy works, and charitie, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy workes, and the last to be more then the first.

20 Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou suffereſt that woman Jezebel, which calleth her selfe a prophetesse, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her, into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

23 And I will kill her children with death, and all the churches shall know that I am hee which searcheth the reines and hearts: and I will give unto

unto every one of you according to your workes.

24 But unto you, I say and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan as they speak, I will put upon you none other burden.

25 But that which yee have already, hold fast till I come.

26 And hee that overcometh, and keepeth my workes unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations:

27 (And he shall rule them with a rod of iron: as the vessels of a potter shall they bee broken to shivers) even as I received of my Father.

28 And I will give him the morning star.

29 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

## CHAP. III.

*2 The angel of the church of Sardis is reproved.*

AND unto the angel of the church of Sardis write, These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven starrs, I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou liveſt, and art dead.

2 Be watchfull, and strengthen the things which remaine, that are ready to die: For I have not found thy workes perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee, as a thiefe, and thou shalt not know what houre I will come upon thee.

4 Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments, and they shall walke with me in white: For they are worthie.

5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment, and I will not blot out his name out of the booke of life, but I will confeſſe his name before my Father and before his angels.

6 He that hath, an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

7 And to the angel of the church of Philadelphia write, These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, hee that hath the key of David, hee that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth:

8 I know thy workes, behold, I have set before thee

thee an open doore, and no man can shut it: For thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my Name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the *Synagogue* of Satan (which say they are Jews, and are not, but doe lie) behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keepe thee from the houre of temptation which shall come upon all the world to try them that dwell upon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

12 Him that overcometh, will I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, and he shall goe no more out: and I will write upon him the Name of my God, and the Name of the city of my God, *which is* new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and *I will write upon him* my new Name.

13 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

14 And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans, writ, These things saith the Amen, the faithfull and true witnesse, the beginning of the creation of God.

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot.

16 So then because thou art luke-warme, and neither cold nor hot, I will *spew* thee out of my mouth.

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing: and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blinde, and naked.

18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakednesse do not appear, and anoint thine eyes with eye-salve, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten, be zealous therefore and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the doore and knocke: If any man hear my voice, and open the doore, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me,

21 To

21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my Throne, even as I also overcame, and am set downe with my Father in his Throne.
22 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

## CHAP. IIII.

*1 John seeth the throne of God in heaven.*

AFter this I looked, and behold, a doore was opened in heaven: and the first voyce which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet talking with mee, which said, Come up hither and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter.
2 And immediatly I was in the spirit: and behold, a Throne was set in heaven, and *one* sate on the Throne.
3 And he that sate, was to looke upon like a jasper, and a sardine stone: & there was a rain bow round about the Throne, in sight like unto an emerald.
4 And round about the Throne were foure and twenty seates, and upon the seats I saw foure and tweaty elders sitting, clothed in white rayment, and they had on their heads crownes of gold.
5 And out of the Throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voyces: and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the Throne, which are the seven Spirits of God.
6 And before the Throne there was a sea of glasse like unto crystall: and in the midst of the Throne, and round about the Throne, were foure beasts full of eyes before and behinde.
7 And the first beast was like a lion, & the second beast like a calfe, and the third beast had a face as a man, & the fourth beast was like a flying eagle.
8 And the foure beasts had each of them six wings about him and they were full of eyes, within, and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.
9 And when those beasts give glory, and honour, and thankes to him that sate on the Throne, who liveth for ever and ever.
10 The foure and twenty elders fall down before him that sate on the Throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the Throne, saying.
11 Thou art worthie, O LORD, to receive glory,

glory, and honour, and power: For thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

## CHAP. V.

1 *The book sealed with seven seals: 9 which only the Lambe that was slaine is worthy to open.*

AND I saw in the right hand of him that sate on the throne, a book written within, and on the backside sealed with seven seals.

2 And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the booke, and to loose the seals thereof?

3 And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the booke, neither to looke thereon.

4 And I wept much because no man was found worthy to open, and to read the booke, neither to looke thereon.

5 And one of the elders saith unto mee, Weepe not: behold, the lion of the tribe of Judah, the root of David, hath prevailed to open the booke, and to loose the seven seals thereof.

6 And I beheld, and loe, in the midst of the Throne, and of the foure beasts, and in the midst of the elders stood a Lamb as it had beene slaine, having seven horns, and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth.

7 And hee came and took the booke out of the right hand of him that sate upon the Throne.

8 And when hee had taken the booke the foure beasts, and foure and twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of Saints.

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the booke, and to open the seals thereof: For thou wast slaine, and hast redeemed us to God by thy bloud, out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation.

10 And hast made us unto our God kings and priests, and we shall reigne on the earth.

11 And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the Throne and the beasts, and the elders, and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands,

12 Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the

Lamb that was slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisedome, and strength, and honour, and glorie, and blessing.

13 And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, & under the earth, & such as are in the sea, & all that are in them, heard I. saying, Blessing, honour, glory, & power, be unto him that sitteth upon the Throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.

14 And the foure beasts said, Amen. And the foure and twentie elders fell downe and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.

## CHAP. VI.

1 *The opening of the seals in order, and what followed thereupon.*

AND I saw when the Lambe opened one of the seals, & I heard as it were the noise of thunder, one of the foure beasts saying, Come, and see.

2 And I saw, & behold, a white horse, and he that sate on him had a bow, & a crown was given unto him, and he went forth conquering, & to conquer.

3 And when hee had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come, and see.

4 And there went out another horse ỹ was red: & power was given to him that sate thereon, to take peace from the earth, & that they should kill one another: & there was given unto him a great sword.

5 And when hee had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come, and see. And I beheld, and loe, a black horse, and he that sate on him had a paire of ballences in his hand.

6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the foure beasts, say, A measure of wheat for a peny, and three measures of barley for a peny, and see thou hurt not the oyle and the wine.

7 And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come, and see.

8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horse, and his name that sate on him was Death, and hell followed with him: and power was given unto them, over the fourth part of the earth to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

9 And when he had opened ỹ fifth seal, I saw under the altar the soules of them ỹ were slain for the word of God & for ỹ testimony which they held.

10 And they cryed with a loud voice, saying,

How

How lōg, O Lord, holy & true, dost thou not judge & avenge our bloud on them ye dwel on the earth?

11 And white robs were given unto every one of them, and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, untill their fellow-servants also, and their brethren that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when hee had opened the sixth seale, and loe, there was a great earth-quake, and the Sun became blacke as sack-cloth of haire, and the Moone became as bloud,

13 And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig-tree casteth her untimely figs when she is shaken of a mighty winde.

14 And the heaven departed as a scrowl, when it is rolled together, and every mountaine and island were moved out of their places:

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every free-man, hid themselves in the dens, and in the rockes of the mountaines.

16 And said to the mountains and rockes, Fall on us, & hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the Throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe:

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand?

## CHAP. VII.

*3 An angel sealeth the servants of God in their foreheads. 4 The number of them that were sealed.*

AND after these things, I saw foure angels standing on ye foure corners of the earth, holding the foure windes of the earth, ye the winde should not blow on ye earth, nor on ye sea, nor on any tree.

2 And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seale of the living God: and hee cryed with a loud voyce to the foure angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth, and the sea.

3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till wee have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed an hundred and fourty and foure thousand, of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of ye tribe of Juda were sealed twelve thousand

of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelve thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.

9 After this I beheld, and lo, a great multitude which no man could number of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands:

10 And cryed with a loud voyce saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.

11 And all the angels stood round about the throne and about the elders, and the foure beasts and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen: Blessing, & glory, and wisedome, & thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.

13 And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes, and whence came they?

14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

15 Therefore are they before the throne of God and serve him day and night in his temple: & he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them.

16 They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat.

17 For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne, shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.

## CHAP. VIII.

1 *At the opening of the seventh seal,* 2 *seven angels had seven trumpets given them.*

AND when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an houre.

2 And I saw the seven angels which stood before God, and to them were given seven trumpets.

3 And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer, and there was given unto him much incense, that he should offer it with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne.

4 And the smoke of the incense which came with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God, out of the angels hand.

5 And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voices and thunderings, and lightnings and an earthquake.

6 And the seven angels, which had the seven trumpets, prepared themselves to sound.

7 The first angel sounded, and there followed hail, and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grasse was burnt up.

8 And the second angel sounded and as it were a great mountaine burning with fire was cast into the sea, & the third part of the sea became blood.

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died, and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers and upon the fountains of waters:

11 And the name of the star is called Wormwood, and the third part of the waters became wormwood, and many men died of the waters because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the starrs, so as the third part of them was darkened: and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

13 And

13 And I beheld, and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Wo, wo, wo, to the inhabiters of the earth, by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels which are yet to sound.

## CHAP. IX.

1 *At the sounding of the fifth angel a star falleth from heaven, to whom is given the key of the bottomlesse pit.*

AND the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a starre fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomlesse pit.

2 And he opened the bottomlesse pit and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace. and the sun and the aire were darkened, by reason of the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth, and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power:

4 And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree, but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should bee tormented five moneths: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man.

6 And in those dayes shall men seek death, and shall not finde it, and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

7 And the shapes of the locusts *were* like unto horses prepared unto battell, and on their heads *were* as it were crowns like gold, and their faces *were* as the face of men.

8 And they had haire as the haire of women, and their teeth were as *the teeth* of lions.

9 And they had breastplates, as it were breastplates of iron, and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battell,

10 And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails, and their power was to hurt men five moneths

11 And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomlesse pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek

tongue hath his name Apollyon.

12 One woe is past, and behold there come two woes more hereafter.

13 And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voyce from the foure horns of the golden altar, which is before God,

14 Saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, Loose the foure angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.

15 And the foure angels were loosed, which were prepared for an houre, and a day, and a moneth, and a yeare, for to slay the third part of men.

16 And the number of the armie of the horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand: and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sate on them, having breastplates of fire, and of jacinct, and brimstone, and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions, and out of their mouthes issued fire, and smoke, and brimstone.

18 By these three was the third part of men killed by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads and with them they do hurt.

20 And the rest of the men which were not killed with these plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold and silver, and brasse, and stone, and of wood; which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk:

21 Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

## CHAP. X.

*1 An angel appeareth with a book open. 9 John is commanded to take and eat the book.*

AND I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rain-bow was upon his head, and his face was as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a little booke open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth,

3 And

3 And cryed with a loud voice, as when a lion roareth: and when he had cryed, seven thunders uttered their voices.

4 And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

5 And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea, and upon the earth, lifted up his hand to heaven,

6 And sware by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer.

7 But in the dayes of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mysterie of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets.

8 And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, Go, and take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which standeth upon the sea, and upon the earth.

9 And I went unto the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little book. And he said unto me, Take it, and eat it up, and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as honey.

10 And I took the little book out of the angels hand, and ate it up, and it was in my mouth sweet as honey: and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he said unto me, Thou must prophesie againe before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

## CHAP. XI.

*Two witnesses prophesie: 6 they have power to shut heaven that it rain not.*

AND there was given me a reed like unto a rod, and the angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the Temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.

2 But the court which is without the Temple leave out, and measure it not: For it is given unto the Gentiles, and the holy city shall they tread under foot fourty and two moneths.

3 And I will give *power* unto my two witnesses,

and they shall prophesie a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are the two olive-trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, hee must in this manner be killed.

6 These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not, in the dayes of their prophesie: and have power over waters to turne them to bloud, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they shall have finished their testimony the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomlesse pit, shall make warre against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.

8 And their dead bodies shall lie in the streets of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kindreds, and tongues, and nations, shall see their dead bodies three dayes and an half, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graves.

10 And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoyce over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another, because these two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.

11 And after three dayes and an half, the Spirit of life from God entred into them, and they stood upon their feet, and great fear fell upon them which saw them.

12 And they heard a great voice from heaven saying unto them, Come up hither. And they ascended up to heaven in a clond, and their enemies beheld them.

13 And the same houre was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain of men seven thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

14 The second woe is past, and behold, the third woe cometh quickly.

15 And the seventh angel sounded, and there were great voices in heaven, saying, the kingdomes of this world are become *the kingdomes*

of our Lord, and of his Christ, and hee shall reigne for ever and ever.

16 And the foure and twenty elders which sate before God on their seates, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God,

17 Saying, We give thee thankes, O Lord God Almighty, which art and wast, and art to come, because thou hast taken to thee thy great power and hast reigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints and them that fear thy name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

19 And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the arke of his testament, and there were lightnings, and voices, and thundrings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

## CHAP. XII.

*1 A woman clothed with the sun, travelleth 4 The dragon standeth ready to devoure her childe.*

AND there appeared a great wonder in heaven, a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve starrs:

2 And she being with childe, cryed, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heaven & behold, a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.

4 And his tail drew the third part of the starrs of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devoure her childe assoon as it was borne.

5 And she brought forth a man childe, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wildernesse, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes.

7 And there was war in heaven. Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the

dragon fought and his angels;

8 And prevailednot, neither was their place found any more in heaven.

9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the devil and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: hee was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ, for the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God, day and night.

11 And they overcame him by the bloud of the Lambe, and by the word of their testimonie, and they loved not their lives unto the death.

12 Therefore rejoyce, ye heavens and yee that dwell in them, wo to the inhabiters of the earth, and of the sea: For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because hee knoweth that hee hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that hee was cast unto the earth, hee persecuted the woman, which brought forth the man-childe.

14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle that she might flie into the wildernesse, into her place: where she is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a time, from the face of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood, after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which kept the commandements of God, and have the testimonie of Jesus Christ.

## CHAP. XIII.

1 *The beast with many heads described.* 11 *Another riseth out of the earth.*

AND I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads, & ten horns, & upon his horns ten crownes, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy.

2 And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard,

leopard, and his feet were as *the feet of* a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.

3 And I saw one of his heads, as it were wounded to death, and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondred after the beast.

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him?

5 And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue fourty and two moneths.

6 And hee opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

7 And it was given unto him to make war with the saints; and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, & tongues, & nations.

8 And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man have an ear, let him hear.

10 He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: He that killeth with the sword, must bee killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

11 And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth, and hee had two hornes like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.

12 And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth, and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he doth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men.

14 And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, by *the meanes of* those miracles which hee had power to doe in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast which had the wound by a sword, and did live.

15 And hee had power to give life vnto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should bee killed.

16 And hee causeth all, both small and great, rich and poore, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads.

17 And that no man might buy or sell saue he that had the marke or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisedome. Let him that hath vnderstanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is six hundred threescore and six.

## CHAP. XIIII.

*1 The Lamb standing on mount Sion with his company: 6 an angel preacheth the gospell.*

AND I looked, and lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred fourty and foure thousand, having his Fathers Name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voyce from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps.

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the foure beasts, and the elders, and no man could learn that song, but the hundred and fourty and foure thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with women, for they are virgins: these are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever hee goeth: these were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits vnto God, and to the Lamb.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I saw another angel flie in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach vnto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,

7 Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him, for the hour of his judgement is come: and worship him that made heaven and earth, and the sea and the fountains of waters.

8 And

8 And there followed another angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because shee made all nations drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

9 And the third angel followed them saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand.

10 The same shall drinke of the wine of the wrath of God, which is powred out without mixture, into the cup of his indignation, and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:

11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever. And they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

12 Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

13 And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, blessed are the dead which die in the Lord, from henceforth, yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours, and their works do follow them.

14 And I looked and behold, a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sate, like unto the son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

15 And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sate on the cloud, Thrust in thy sickle and reap, for the time is come for thee to reap, for the harvest of the earth is ripe.

16 And hee that sate on the cloud, thrust in his sickle on the earth and the earth was reaped.

17 And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle.

18 And another angel came out from the altar which had power over fire, and cryed with a loud cry, to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for her grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast

it into the great wine-presse of the wrath of God.

20 And the wine-presse was troden without the city, and bloud came out of the wine-presse, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

## CHAP. XV.

1 *The seven angels with the seven last plagues.* 7 *The seven vials full of the wrath of God.*

AND I saw another signe in heaven, great and marvellous, seven angels having the seven last plagues, for in them is filled up the wrath of God,

2 And I saw as it were a sea of glasse, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his marke, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glasse, having the harps of God.

3 And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty, Just and true are thy wayes, thou King of Saints.

4 Who shall not feare thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy name? for thou only art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee, for thy judgements are made manifest.

5 And after that I looked, and behold, the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened:

6 And the seven angels came out of the temple, having the seven plagues, clothed in pure and white linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the foure beasts gave unto the seven angels, seven golden vials full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever and ever.

8 And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power, and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

## CHAP. XVI.

1 *The angels pour out of their vials full of wrath.* 6 *The plagues that follow thereupon.*

AND I heard a great voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels, Goe your wayes and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth.

2 And

2 And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth, and there fell a noisome & grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worthipped his image.

3 And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man, and every living soul died in the sea.

4 And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters, and they became blood.

5 And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus.

6 For they have shed the blood of saints and Prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the altar say, even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy judgements.

8 And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the Sun, and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire.

9 And men were scorched with great heat, and blaspheмed the Name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not, to give him glory.

10 And the fifth angel poured out his viol upon the seat of the beast, and his kingdome was full of darkneſſe, and they gnawed their tongues for pain,

11 And blaspheмed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds.

12 And the sixth angel poured out his viall upon the great river Euphrates, and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.

13 And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the Dragon and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which goe forth unto the kings of the earth and of the whole world, to gather them to the battel of that great day of God Almighty.

15 Behold, I come as a thief, Blessed is he that

that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked and they see his shame.

16 And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue Armageddon.

17 And the seventh angel powred out his vial into the aire, and there came a great voyce out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings, and there was a great earthquake such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake and so great.

19 And the great city was devided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath.

20 And every iland fled away, And the mountains were not found

21 And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, *every stone* about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail, for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

## CHAP. XVII.

*A woman arayed in scarlet, with a golden cup in her hand, sitteth on the beast, which is Babylon.*

AND there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither, I will shew unto thee the judgement of the great whore, that sitteth upon many waters.

2 With whome the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabiters of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

3 So hee carried me away in the spirit into the wildernesse: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet colored beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads, and ten horns.

4 And the woman was arayed in purple, and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stone and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthinesse of her fornication.

5 And upon her forehead was a name written

MYSTERY

MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

6 And I saw the woman drunken with the bloud of the saints, and with the bloud of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondred with great admiration.

7 And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvell? I will tell thee the mistery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns.

8 The beast that thou sawest, was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomlesse pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, (whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here is the minde which hath wisedome. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.

10 And there are seven kings, five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come; and when he cometh; he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition.

12 And the ten horns which thou sawest, are ten kings, which have received no kingdome as yet: but receive power as kings one houre with the beast.

13 These have one minde, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.

14 These shall make warre with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings, and they that are with him, are called, and chosen, and faithfull.

15 And he saith unto me The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are proples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and give their kingdome unto

unto the beast, untill the words of God shall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

## CHAP. XVIII.

*1 Babylon is fallen. 4 The people of God commanded to depart out of her.*

AND after these things I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power, and the earth was lightned with his glory.

2 And he cryed mightily with a strong voice saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hatefull bird.

3 For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

4 And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.

5 For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double, according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double.

7 How much she hath glorified her selfe, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queene, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

8 Therefore shall her plagus come in one day death, and mourning, and famine, and she shall be utterly burnt with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.

9 And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning:

10 Standing afar, off for the feare of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city, for in one houre is thy judgement come.

11 And

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weepe and mourne over her, for no man buyeth her merchandise any more.

12 The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stons, and of pearls, and fine linen; and purple, and silke, and scarlet and all thyne wood, and all manner of vessels of ivorie, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brasse, and iron, and marble,

13 And cinamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, & oyle, and fine flowre, and wheate, and beasts, and sheep, and horses and chariots, and slaves, and soules of men.

14 And the fruits that thy soul lusted after, are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly, are departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them no more at all.

15 The merchants of these things which were made rich by her, shall stand a far off, for the feare of her torment, weeping and wailing,

16 And saying, Alas, alas that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, & purple, & scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones and pearls:

17 For in one houre so great riches is come to nought. And every ship-master, and all the company in ships, and sailers, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off,

18 And cryed when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great citie

19 And they cast dust on their heads, and cryed, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great citie, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea, by reason of her costlinesse, for in one houre is she made desolate.

20 Rejoyce over her thou heaven, and ye holy Apostles and Prophets, for God hath avenged you on her.

21 And a mighty angel tooke up a stone like a great milstone, and cast it into ỹ sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon bee thrown down, and shall bee found no more at all.

22 And the voice of harpers & musicians, and of pipers, & trumpeters, shalbe heard no more at all in thee: and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft hee be, shall be found any more in thee; and the sound of

of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee
23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee: & the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee for thy merchants were ỹ great men of the earth: for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.
24 And in her was found the blood of prophets and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

## CHAP. XIX.

*1 God praised for judging the whore and avenging the blood of his saints. 7 The marriage of the Lamb.*

AND after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia, salvation, and glory, and honour, and power unto the Lord our God:
2 For true and righteous are his judgements: for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.
3 And again they said, Alleluia, and her smoke rose up for ever and ever.
4 And the foure and twenty elders, and the foure beasts fell down and worshipped God that sate on the throne, saying, Amen. Alleluia.
5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying, praise our God, all ye his servants, and yee that fear him, both small and great.
6 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voyce of many waters, and as the voyce of mighty thundrings saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.
7 Let us bee glad and reioyce, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made her self ready.
8 And to her was granted, that shee should bee arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousnesse of saints.
9 And hee saith unto mee, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he sayeth unto me, These are the true sayings of God.
10 And I fell at his feet to worship him: and he said unto mee, See thou doe it not: I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren that have the

testimony

testimony of Jesus, worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophesie.

11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse, and he that sate upon him was called faithfull and true, and in righteousnesse hee doth judge and make war.

12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns, and he had a name written that no man knew but himself.

13 And he was clothed with a vesture dipt in bloud, and his name is called, the word of God.

14 And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and hee shall rule them with a rod of iron, and he treadeth the winepresse of the fiercenesse and wrath of Almighty God.

16 And he hath on his vesture, and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

17 And I saw an angel standing in the sun, and he cryed with a loud voice saying to all the fowls that flee in the midst of heaven, Come and gather your selves together unto the supper of the great God;

18 That ye may eat the flesh of Kings and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the Kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together to make war against him that sate on the horse, and against his army.

20 And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slaine with the sword of him that sate upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth; and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

CHAP.

1 Satan bound for a thousand years. 5 The first resurrection. 12 The last and generall resurrection.

AND I saw an angel come downe from heaven, having the key of the bottomlesse pit, and a great chaine in his hand.

2 And he laid hold on the dragon that old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,

3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should bee fulfilled: and after that, hee must bee loosed a little season.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sate upon them, and judgement was given unto them: and I saw the soules of them that were beheaded for the witnesse of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his marke upon their foreheads, or in their hands: and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand yeares.

5 But the rest of the dead lived not again untill the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is hee that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death have no power, but they shall be priests of God, and of Christ, & shall reigne with him a thousand yeares.

7 And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall goe out to deceive the nations which are in the foure quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battell: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

9 And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the Saints about, and the beloved citie: and fire came downe from God out of heaven, and devoured them.

10 And the devil that deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet *are*, and shall be tormented day and night, for ever and ever.

11 And I saw a great white Throne, and him that sate on it, from whose face the earth & the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them.

12 And

12 And I saw the dead small and great, stand before God: and the bookes were oppened: and another booke was opened, which is *the booke of* life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written *in* the bookes, according to their works.

13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it: and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death.

15 And whosoever was not found written in the booke of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

## CHAP. XXI.

1 *A new heaven and a new earth.* 10 *The heavenly Jerusalem.* 23 *She needeth no sun.*

AND I saw a new heaven, and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away and there was no more sea.

2 And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying, behold, the tabernacle of God *is* with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, *and be* their God.

4 And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes: and there shall be no more death neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

5 And he that sate upon the throne, said, behold, I make all things new. And hee said unto mee, Write: for these words are true and faithfull.

6 And he said unto me, It is done: I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, I will give unto him that is athirst, of the fountaine of the water of life freely.

7 He that overcometh shall inherite all things and I will be his God and he shall be my son.

8 But the fearfull, and unbeleeving, and the abominable and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

9 And

9 And there came unto mee one of the seven angels, which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues: and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the bride, the Lambes wife.

10 And hee carried mee away in the Spirit to a great and high mountaine, and shewed mee that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God,

11 Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, cleare as christall;

12 And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the east three gates, on the north three gates, on the south three gates, and on the west three gates.

14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

15 And hee that talked with mee, had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the city lieth foure square, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equall.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and fourty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is of the angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like unto cleare glasse.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper, the second saphire, the third a chalcedome, the fourth an emerald,

20 The fifth sardonyx, the sixth sardius, the seventh chrysolyte, the eight beryll, the ninth a topaz, the tenth a chrysoprasus, the eleventh a jacinct, the twelfth an amethyst.

21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearles, every severall gate was of one pearl, and the street of

of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glasse.

22 And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty, and the Lamb, are the temple of it.

23 And the city had no need of the sun neither of the moon to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.

24 And the nations of them which are saved, shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

25 And the gates of it shall not bee shut at all by day: for there shall bee no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or *maketh* a lie: but they which are written in the Lambs book of life.

## CHAP. XXII.

1 *The river of the water of life.* 5 *The light of the city of God is himself.*

AND hee shewed mee a pure river of water, of life, clear as chrystall, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb.

2 In the midst of the street of it, and of either side of the river, *was there* the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yeelded her fruit every moneth: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall bee no more curse, but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and his servants shall serve him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his name *shall be* in their foreheads.

5 And there shall be no night there, and they need no candle, neither light of the sun, for the Lord God giveth them light, and they shall reigne for ever and ever.

6 And he said unto me, These sayings *are* faithfull and true. And the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done.

7 Behold, I come quickly. blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophesie of this book.

8 And I John saw these things, and heard them

And

And when I had heard and seen, I fell downe to worship before the feet of the angel, which shewed me these things.

9 Then saith hee unto mee, See *thou doe it* not: for I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keepe the sayings of this booke: worship God.

10 And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophesie of this booke: for the time is at hand.

11 Hee that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him bee righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with mee, to give every man according as his works shall be.

13 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.

14 Blessed are they that doe his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city.

15 For without *are* dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.

16 I Jesus have sent mine angel, to testifie unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the off spring of David, and the bright and morning star.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth, say, Come. And let him that is athirst, come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

18 For I testifie unto every man that heareth the words of the prophesie of this booke, if any man shall adde unto these things, God shall adde unto him the plagues that are written in this booke:

19 And if any man shall take away from the words of the booke of this prophesie, God shall take away his part out of the booke of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this booke.

20 He which testifieth these things, saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, Come Lord Jesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ bee with you all. Amen.